South Central Virginia
Genealogical Society

This is for your
Virginia Library

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/bwb_S0-DZJ-128

# STRATFORD HALL

AND THE

# LEES

CONNECTED WITH ITS HISTORY

---

BIOGRAPHICAL, GENEALOGICAL

AND HISTORICAL

---

COMPILED AND PUBLISHED BY
FREDERICK WARREN ALEXANDER
Member of the Historical
Society of Virginia

---

OAK GROVE, VA.
1912

F. W. ALEXANDER

COPYRIGHTED
1912.

The owner of this book .....

is hereby made an honorary member of the Lee Birthplace Memorial Committee.

DEDICATED

to the

PATRIOTIC ORDER SONS OF AMERICA.

That great Association of Americans which has done so much to perpetuate the memory of our great men and preserve our historic spots for the benefit of posterity.

F. W. Alexander.

Oak Grove, Va., 1912.

## List of Illustrations.


| | Page |
|---|---|
| Lee Memorial Certificate | 5 |
| Lee Coat of Arms | 25 |
| Colonel Richard Lee, 1 | 27 |
| Anne Lee, (Mrs. Richard, 1) | 33 |
| Colonel Richard Lee, 2 | 36 |
| Laetitia Corbin Lee, (Mrs. Richard, 2) | 41 |
| Colonel Thomas Lee, 3 | 47 |
| Stratford Hall | 59 |
| Hannah (Ludwell) Lee, (Mrs. Thomas, 3) | 66 |
| Richard Henry Lee, 4 | 77 |
| Fac-Simile of the Original Resolution for Independence | 84 |
| Francis Lightfoot Lee, 4 | 102 |
| William Lee, 4 | 106 |
| Arthur Lee, 4 | 113 |
| Major General Henry Lee 5, (Light Horse Harry) | 146 |
| Fac-Simile of the Medal awarded 1778 | 151 |
| General Henry Lee's Grave | 163 |
| Judge Charles Lee, 5 | 168 |
| Anne Lee (Mrs. Charles, 5) | 170 |
| Richard Bland Lee, 5 | 172 |
| Theodoric Lee, 5 | 174 |
| Edmund Jennings Lee, 5 | 176 |
| Admiral Samuel Phillips Lee, 6 | 179 |
| Elizabeth (Blair) Lee, (Mrs. Samuel Phillips, 6) | 184 |
| Major John Fitzgerald Lee, 6 | 185 |
| Charles Carter Lee, 6 | 193 |
| Captain Sydney Smith Lee, 6 | 197 |
| General Robert Edward Lee, 6 | 204 |
| Mary Anne Randolph Custis Lee, (Mrs. R. E., 6) | 272 |
| Arlington House | 274 |

## List of Illustrations, (Continued.)


Page

Edmund Jennings Lee, 7 ..... 284
Cassius F. Lee, 7 ..... 288
Blair Lee, 7 ..... 295
Anne Clymer (Brooks) Lee, (Mrs. Blair Lee, 7) 297
Major General Fitzhugh Lee, 7 ..... 298
Major General George Washington Custis Lee, 7 ..... 311
Major General William Henry Fitzhugh Lee, 7 . 315
Brigadier General Edwin Gray Lee, 7 ..... 331


## CONTENTS.


The Lees Born at Stratford ..... 21
The Lees who have lived at Stratford, but not born there ..... 21
The Lees of England ..... 22


### First Generation.


Colonel Richard Lee, Founder of the family in Virginia ..... 27
Anne Lee, his wife ..... 33
Their Children ..... 33


### Second Generation.


John Lee, (Richard 1) ..... 35
Richard Lee, (Richard 1) ..... 36
Laetitia (Corbin) Lee, his wife ..... 41
Their Children ..... 41
Hancock Lee, (Richard 1) ..... 42
Mary (Kendall) Lee, his first wife ..... 42
Their Children ..... 43
Sarah (Allerton) Lee, his second wife ..... 43
Their Children ..... 44




South Central Virginia Genealogical Society

## CONTENTS (Continued.)


| | Page |
|---|---|
| Charles Lee, (Richard 1) | 44 |
| Elizabeth (Medstand) Lee, his wife | 44 |
| Their Children | 44 |


### Third Generation.


| | |
|---|---|
| Richard Lee, (Richard 2, Richard 1) | 45 |
| Martha (Silk) Lee, his wife | 45 |
| Their Children | 45 |
| Phillip Lee, (Richard 2, Richard 1) | 46 |
| Sarah (Brooks) Lee, his first wife | 46 |
| Their Children | 46 |
| Elizabeth (widow of Henry Sewall) his second wife | 46 |
| Their Children | 46 |
| Colonel Thomas Lee, (Richard 2, Richard 1) | 47 |
| Hannah (Ludwell) Lee, his wife | 66 |
| Their Children | 67 |
| Henry Lee, (Richard 2, Richard 1) | 67 |
| Mary (Bland) Lee, his wife | 67 |
| Their Children | 67 |


### Fourth Generation.


| | |
|---|---|
| George Lee, (Richard 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 69 |
| Elizabeth (Wormley) Lee, his first wife | 69 |
| Their Children | 69 |
| Anne (widow of Lawrence Washington) Lee, his second wife | 70 |
| Their Children | 70 |
| Phillip Ludwell Lee, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 70 |
| Elizabeth (Steptoe) Lee | 72 |
| Their Children | 72 |

## CONTENTS (Continued.)


Page

Thomas Ludwell Lee, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 73
Mary (Aylett) Lee ..... 76
Their Children ..... 76
Richard Henry Lee, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 77
Ann (Aylett) Lee, his first wife ..... 100
Their Children ..... 100
Anne (widow of Mr. Pinkard) Lee, his second wife ..... 100
Their Children ..... 100
Francis Lightfoot Lee, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 102
Rebecca (Tayloe) Lee his wife ..... 105
Wm. Lee, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ... 106
Hannah Philippa (Ludwell) Lee, his wife ..... 112
Their Children ..... 112
Arthur Lee, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) .. 113
Henry Lee, (Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ... 132
Lucy (Grymes) Lee, his wife ..... 138
Their Children ..... 138


### Fifth Generation.


Thomas Ludwell Lee, (Thomas Ludwell 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 139
Fanny (Carter) Lee, his wife ..... 139
Their Children ..... 139
George Lee, (Thomas Ludwell 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 139
Evelyn Byrd (Beverly) Lee, his wife ..... 140
Their Children ..... 140
Thomas Lee, (Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 140

## CONTENTS (Continued.)


Page

Mildred (Washington) Lee, his first wife ..... 140
Eliza (Brent) Lee, his second wife ..... 140
Their Children ..... 140
Ludwell Lee, (Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 141
Flora (Lee) Lee, his first wife ..... 144
Their Children ..... 144
Elizabeth (Armistead) Lee, his second wife .... 144
Their Children ..... 145
Francis Lightfoot Lee, (Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 145
Elizabeth (Fitzgerald) Lee, his first wife ..... 145
Jane (Fitzgerald) Lee, his second wife ..... 145
Their Children ..... 145
Major General Henry Lee, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 146
Matilda (Lee) Lee, his first wife ..... 166
Their Children ..... 166
Ann Hill (Carter) Lee, his second wife ..... 167
Their Children ..... 168
Charles Lee, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 168
Ann (Lee) Lee, his first wife ..... 170
Their Children ..... 170
Margaret (widow of Mr. Peyton) Lee, his second wife ..... 171
Their Children ..... 171
Richard Bland Lee, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 172
Elizabeth (Collins) Lee, his wife ..... 173
Their Children ..... 173
Theodoric Lee, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 174

## CONTENTS (Continued.)


Page

Catherine (Hite) Lee, his wife ..... 174
Their Children ..... 174
Edmund Jennings Lee, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 176
Sarah (Lee) Lee, his wife ..... 176
Their Children ..... 176


### Sixth Generation.


Samuel Phillips Lee, (Francis Lightfoot 5, Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1 ..... 179
Elizabeth (Blair) Lee, his wife ..... 184
Their Children ..... 184
John Fitzgerald Lee, (Francis Lightfoot 5, Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 185
Eleanor Ann (Hill) Lee, his wife ..... 188
Their Children ..... 188
George Lee, (George 5, Thomas Ludwell 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 190
Sarah Moore (Henderson) Lee, his wife ..... 190
Their Children ..... 190
Henry Lee, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 191
Anne R. (McCarty) Lee, his wife ..... 192
Their Children ..... 192
Charles Carter Lee, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 193
Lucy Penn (Taylor) Lee, his wife ..... 194
Their Children ..... 194
Sydney Smith Lee, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 197

CONTENTS (Continued.)


| | Page |
|---|---|
| Anna Maria (Mason) Lee, his wife | 199 |
| Their Children | 200 |
| General Robert Edward Lee, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 204 |
| Mary Ann Randolph (Custis) Lee, his wife | 272 |
| Their Children | 277 |
| Richard Bland Lee, (Richard Bland 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 278 |
| Julia Ann Marion (Prosser) Lee, his wife | 281 |
| Their Children | 281 |
| Zaccheus Collins Lee, (Richard Bland 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 283 |
| Martha Anne (Jenkins) Lee, his wife | 283 |
| Their Children | 283 |
| Edmund Jennings Lee, (Edmund Jennings 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 284 |
| Eliza (Shepherd) Lee, his first wife | 285 |
| Their Children | 285 |
| Henrietta (Bedinger) Lee, his second wife | 287 |
| Their Children | 287 |
| Cassius Francis Lee, (Edmund Jennings 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 288 |
| Hanna Phillippa Ludwell (Hopkins) Lee, his first wife | 290 |
| Their Children | 290 |
| Anne Eliza (Gardner) Lee, his second wife | 291 |
| Their Children | 291 |
| Richard Henry Lee, (Ludwell 5, Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) | 292 |
| Mary Duncan (Mahone) Lee, his first wife | 293 |
| Their Children | 293 |
| Anne Edna (Jordan) Lee, his second wife | 293 |
| Their Children | 293 |

## CONTENTS (Continued.)

### Seventh Generation.


Page

Blair Lee, (Samuel Phillips 6, Francis Lightfoot 5, Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 295
Anne (Brooks) Lee, his wife ..... 297
Their Children ..... 297
General Fitzhugh Lee, (Sydney Smith 6, Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) 298
Ellen Bernard (Fowle) Lee, his wife ..... 309
Their Children ..... 309
George Washington Custis Lee, (Robert Edward 6, Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 311
Wm. Henry Fitzhugh Lee, (Robert Edward 6, Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 315
Charlotte (Wickham) Lee, his first wife ..... 327
Their Children ..... 327
Mary Tabb (Bolling) Lee, his second wife .... 328
Their Children ..... 328
Robert Edward Lee, (Robert Edward 6, Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) .. 328
Charlotte (Haxall) Lee, his first wife ..... 330
Juliet (Carter) Lee, his second wife ..... 330
Their Children ..... 330
Edwin Gray Lee, (Edmund Jennings 6, Edmund Jennings 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 331
Susan (Pendleton) Lee, his wife ..... 332
Edmund Jennings Lee, (Edmund Jennings 6, Edmund Jennings 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1) ..... 332
Rebecca (Rust) Lee, his first wife ..... 332
Their Children ..... 332
Bessie Read (Neilson) Lee, his second wife... 332

## PREFACE.

ON September 10, 1907, I presented a resolution before the Virginia State Camp, Patriotic Order Sons of America, then in Session in the City of Richmond, Va., which was unanimously adopted. It was in part as follows:

### PREAMBLE.

"Recognizing the importance of preserving for the benefit of posterity those historic and patriotic landmarks which are bound to leave a wholesome and everlasting influence on our future generations, and as there is situated in the county of Westmoreland, State of Virginia an old homestead, known as "Stratford," the ancestral home of the "Lees," the birthplace of many by that name, whose fame became great in our country's history." (Here was recited a brief history of several of the Lees).

Therefore, in view of the facts above recited, and believing, as members of the Patriotic Order Sons of America, that patriotism is one of the highest and noblest affection of the human soul, and that by disseminating sentiments of patriotism and creating a feeling of devotion to country, we make the better citizens of our people; and believing that it is our duty as Americans to perpetuate the memory of those great men who, by their sacrifice, contributed

so largely to the blessings and privileges which we now enjoy; therefore be it

**Resolved,** That this State Camp authorize the Executive Committee to appoint a committee to be known as the "Lee Birthplace Memorial Committee," consisting of as many members, and under such conditions as the Executive Committee may elect, for the purpose of purchasing the homestead known as "Stratford," and raising money to pay for the same. Be it further

**Resolved,** That it is the purpose of this committee to have "Stratford" purchased by the people, and remain forever the property of the people, to refurnish it in the style of the period when these great men were born, to build a wharf and make it a place where patriotic citizens may gather and refresh their memory with the great deeds performed by these heroes of the past. Be it further

**Resolved,** That we invite the people of this country and all organizations interested, to subscribe any amount up to $100 (small subscriptions being preferred, in order that more may have the opportunity to contribute). The name of every contributor (whether person or organization) shall be permanently and publicly preserved. All giving $100 to constitute the Roll of Honor, the name to be recorded in the order in which the contribution is received. The names of all contributors to be so arranged that all visitors may know the individuals and organizations to whom the country is indebted for the preservation of this historic spot."

In my work carrying out the above resolutions I found a majority of the people woefully ignorant of the history of this great family, with perhaps the exception of Richard Henry Lee, Light Horse Harry Lee and General R. E. Lee. And about all that is generally known of the latter was his record from 1861 to 1865, and the great service he rendered our country prior to 1861 and the great benefit he became to Education after 1865 were almost wholly forgotten.

The reason for this I assumed was that so much has been written about these great men that it was impossible for the ordinary reader to devote sufficient time or to secure the many books necessary for a thorough knowledge of the lives of this great family, and while I do not claim anything new within the covers of this book, the arrangement is such that anyone reading this volume may become thoroughly acquainted with the principal acts in the lives of over fifty Lees whose history is connected either directly or indirectly with "Stratford Hall," the Ancestral Home of the Lee family which we are trying to preserve and for the benefit of which this book is published.

For a deeper study of the Lees herein mentioned I would refer the readers to the following Publications:

Lee of Virginia, By Edmund Jennings Lee, M. D. 1 vol.
Old Churches and Families of Virginia, By Bishop Meade, 2 vols.
Memoirs of the War, By Henry Lee, 1 vol.
Biography of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence, By John Sanderson, 9 vols.
Letters of Wm. Lee.
Howe's History of Va.

Life of Arthur Lee, 2 vols., By R. H. Lee.
American Reference Library.
Memoirs of R. H. Lee, By A. L. Long.
Universal Cyclopedia and Atlas.
Memoirs of R. H. Lee and his correspondence.

This book gives a brief sketch of the Lees of England and the first seven generations in America and include the names of the children of the eighth.

If this book is successful in inspiring any one to greater love of country, and to more nearly follow the examples set us by the great men herein mentioned, I shall feel amply rewarded for the time and patience spent in its compilation.

F. W. ALEXANDER.

Oak Grove, Va., 1912.

## THE LEES BORN AT STRATFORD.

1—Phillip Ludwell Lee 4, .....Feb. 24-1727
2—Hannah Lee 4, .....Feb. 6-1728
3—John Lee 4, .....Mar. 28-1729
4—Lucy Lee 4, .....1730
5—Thomas Ludwell Lee 4, .....Dec. 13-1730
6—Richard Henry Lee 4, .....Jan 20-1732
7—Francis Lightfoot Lee 4, .....Oct. 14-1734
8—Alice Lee 4, .....June 4-1736
9—William Lee 4, .....Aug. 31-1739
10—Arthur Lee 4, .....Dec. 21-1740
11—Matilda Lee 5, .....
12—Flora Lee 5, .....
13—Phillip Lee 5, .....Feb. 24-1775
14—Nathaniel Greene Lee 6, .....1784
15—Phillip Ludwell Lee 6, .....1785
16—Lucy Grymes Lee 6, .....1786
17—Henry Lee 6, ..... May 28-1787
18—Algernon Sydney Lee 6, .....April 2-1795
19—Charles Carter Lee 6, .....Nov. 9-1798
20—Anne Kinloch Lee 6, .....June 19-1800
21—Robert Edward Lee 6, .....January 19-1807
22—Margaret Lee 7, .....

### The Lees Who Have Lived at Stratford, But Not Born There.

Thomas Lee 3, born at Mount Pleasant Va.....1690
Richard Lee 4, Born at Mt. Pleasant, Va. June 17, 1723.
Henry Lee 5, Born at Leesylvania, Va., Jan. 29, 1756.
Sydney Smith Lee 6, Born at Camden, N. J., September 2, 1802.

## THE LEES OF ENGLAND.

ON account of the many families by the name of Lee (though spelt differently) referred to in the earliest English records, the accurate tracing of their descendants is almost impossible, and as the object of this book is to give a brief history of those connected with "Stratford Hall," it is sufficient to state that the record here produced, is from the best evidence obtainable at this time.

The first of this name we have any record of, is Hugo de Lee, father of Reyner de Lee, who was sheriff in 1201 and is the first Lee on record bearing the Fesse and Billetts, which have been their Coat of Arms and which Richard Lee brought to Virginia in 1641 and borne by his descendents for generations.

This Reyner de Lee had a son Thomas, who in turn had a son, John, and Thomas, one of which had a son Robert and these names together with Richard, or some one or more of them, have appeared in every generation since.

The first Lee of Langley, seems to have been Roger, son of John de Lee, of Lea Hall, descended from Sir Thomas Lee and Petronella Corbet.

The pedigree of this family, as registered in the Herald's College, covers a period of over seven hundred years, and the representatives at different times have been:

1569-Richard Lee Esq., of Langley and Humphrey Lee Esq., of Coton.

1584-John Lee Esq., of Coton.

1623-Sir Humphrey Lee, Baronet of Langley.

1663-Thomas Lee Esq., of Coton.

The Lee's of Coton and the Lee's of Langley, bore the same arms, showing them to be of the same family.

The office of Sheriff of Shropshire, has been filled by the following members of the family:

1201—Reyner de Lee.

1387—Robert de Lee.

1395—Sir Thomas Lee Knight.

1465—Ralph Lee. Esq.

1479—Richard Lee, Esq.

1496—Richard Lee, Esq.

1547—Thomas Lee, Esq.

1600—Humphrey Lee, Esq.

1639—Sir Richard Lee, Baronet.

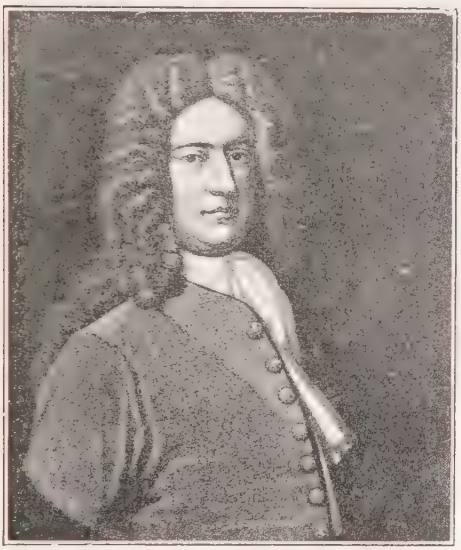
All evidence points to the fact that the immigrant was from the Shropshire family: He claimed it during his lifetime, and his children did also.

The immediate parentage of Richard Lee, the founder of the family in Virginia, has never been absolutely proven, but the best evidence obtainable, would suggest, that he was a brother of Thomas Lee, of Coton, who registered at the Herald's College in 1663.

COAT OF ARMS.

Coat of Arms of Col. Richard Lee. This is the form registered at the Herald's office in London, as borne by Col. Richard Lee, Secretary of State in Virginia, in 1659.

## FIRST GENERATION.



**Colonel Richard Lee.**

THE earliest record of the founder of the Lee family, in Virginia, is a letter written by William Lee in 1771, in which he said, among other things, "Richard Lee, of a good family in Shropshire, —some time in the Reign of King Charles, the First, went over to the Colony of Virginia, as Secretary and one of the King's Privy Council,—He was a man of good stature, comely visage, and enterprising genius, a sound head, vigorous spirit and generous nature.

When he got to Virginia, which was at that time not much cultivated, he was so pleased with the country, that he made large settlements there with the servants that he carried over. After some years, he returned to England and gave away all the lands he had taken up, and settled at his own expense, to those servants he had fixed on them, some of whose descendents are now possessed of very considerable property in the Colony. After staying some time in England, he returned again to Virginia with a fresh band of adventurers all of whom he settled there."

An old tradition has stated that Richard Lee came to Virginia with a brother, that they settled in York County, that the brother became dissatisfied and desired to return home, that both of them gave up the lands they had settled and returned to England.

A part of this tradition seems to be confirmed, by a court record, which states, that a patent was granted to Robert Lee for 540 acres in Gloucester County, "Beginning at a red oak by Mr. Thornton's path, and to a white oak by Col. Lee's horse path and to a branch by the said Robert Lee's plantation; 200 acres thereof formerly granted to Col. Richard Lee on the 17th day of May, 1655 and by him assigned to the said Robert Lee on the 5th day of February, 1657, and the remaining 340 acres for the transportation of seven persons, etc."

Richard Lee first settled in York County and under date of August 10th, 1642, received a grant of 1000 acres. This was due, the patent states, "Unto the said Richard Lee by and for his own personal adventure by his wife Ann, and John Francis, and

by assignment from Mr. Thomas Hill, Florintine Paine and William Freeman, of their right of land due for the transportation of seventeen persons."

This was his first home in Virginia and he called his plantation "Paradise."

Gloucester County was taken from York County in 1652 and this plantation was situated in that part which became Gloucester County, as the following record proves. On July 22d, 1674, a patent was issued to "Major Richard Lee for 1140 acres in Gloucester called "Paradise" on a branch of Poropotank Creek; 1000 thereof being due to the said Richard Lee by two former patents, the residue now found to be within the bounds." Here he had a store and a warehouse.

In 1646 Richard Lee sat on the York County Bench as Magistrate and represented York County as Burgess in 1647.

Richard Lee seems to have been engaged in commerce as well as agriculture as he had an interest in vessels trading between England and Virginia and made many voyages to and fro, being in England in 1654, 1655, 1659, 1661 and 1663.

In 1651 he represented Northumberland County as Burgess so he probably settled there about that time This home was located on Dividing Creeks.

The main creek is about a mile long then divides into branches which makes several "necks;" on two of these he located his plantation.

The first of these granted was for 800 acres in 1651, the second for 600 acres in 1656. Tradition states that Richard Lee was the first white man to settle in the Northern Neck.

The various tracts of land taken up by Richard Lee helps to trace his movements after settling in Virginia and furnish, to some extent, a record of his official positions.

A grant of 1000 acres on Poropotank Creek, Aug. 10th, 1642, for his own personal adventure, his wife Ann, etc. Dec. 2d, 1644, ninety-one acres on New Poquoson Creek for the transportation of two persons into the Colony. 1250 acres on the York or Pamunky for assignment from William Freeman of his right and title to the transportation of twenty-five persons into the Colony, Dec. 21st, 1648.

October 18th, 1650, one thousand acres of "land situated upon the south side of the Potomack River beginning at the mouth of a small creek issuing out of a Matchoteck River," etc. for the transportation of twenty persons, etc. This seems to be his first grant in what is now Westmoreland County.

On May 24th, 1651, he was granted 800 acres in Northumberland County for the transportation of sixteen persons into the Colony.

On May 24th, 1651, five hundred and fifty acres on the north side of York River. This patent shows that at this date Richard Lee was Secretary for the Colony.

On March 20th, 1653, three hundred acres north of the York River for the transportation of six persons into the Colony.

Nov. 14th, 1653, three hundred acres in Lancaster County on the south side of the Rappahannock River (now Middlesex County) for the transportation of six persons, etc.

May 17th, 1655, two hundred acres in Gloucester for the transportation of four persons, etc.

March 4th, 1656, six hundred acres in Northumberland County for the transportation of twelve persons, etc. This was the second grant on Dividing Creeks.

June 2d, 1656, eight hundred and fifty acres on Peanketank Swamp to William and Hancock Lee, sons of Col. Richard Lee, etc.

June 4th, 1656, five acres on Poropotank Creek "Whereon the store of the said Col. Lee standeth," for the transportation of one person, etc., forty-five acres being still due.

June 5th, 1658, two thousand acres upon the south side of the Potomack River for the transportation of forty persons, etc.

March 26th, 1663, four thousand acres of land in Westmoreland County, etc. In this patent he is mentioned as Councillor of State, showing that he held this office on that date.

Dec. 1st, 1664, two thousand acres on the south side of the Potomack River for the transportation of twelve persons, etc.

Richard Lee was a most ardent royalist and supporter of the Stuarts, and when Charles II. was an exile, he made a voyage to Holland to visit him.

John Gibbon, who visited Richard Lee in 1659, wrote that Col. Lee had a fair estate in Virginia and that the product of his tobacco amounted to 2,000 pounds sterling ($10,000) per annum.

In 1663, while in England with his wife and children, Richard Lee made his will: He returned to Virginia in 1663, and while the exact date of his

death is not known, it was probably early in 1664, as he died prior to April 20th, 1664, as on that date his son (John Lee) made application for 4,700 acres of land due his father, Col. Richard Lee, for the transportation of ninety-four persons into the Colony.

His will was probated in London, January 10th, 1665.

Richard Lee died at his home on Dividing Creeks, known as Cobb's Hall, in Northumberland County, where he was buried, and while no evidence exists at this time, it was so stated in 1798 by Portia, daughter of William Lee.

**Anne Lee**

Anne, wife of Col. Richard Lee, founder of the family in Virginia in 1641.

There is no record of the surname of Ann, wife of Richard Lee, and nothing is known of her history or that of her family. After Richard Lee's death she married a Mr. Edmund Lister in 1666. The accepted relative ages of the children of Richard and Ann Lee are as follows:

I—John (2) see page 35.

II—Richard (2) see page 36.

III—Francis (2) born about 1648, died in England in 1714. He was a Justice for Northumberland

County in 1673, but it is thought that some years after this he went to England and established himself in mercantile life.

The register of St. Dionis Back church has the following entries:

"Abigail, daughter of Mr. Francis and Tamar Lee, merchant, born and baptised 9 July, 1694. John, son of Francis Lee, merchant, buried in ye great Vault, 9 June, 1695. Mrs. Tamar Lee, wife of Mr. Francis Lee, merchant, buried in ye great vault, 1 May, 1694-5. Tamar, daughter of Mr. Francis Lee, merchant, buried in ye great vault, 18 Jan., 1699-1700. Mr. Francis Lee, merchant buried in ye great vault in the chancel, 19 Nov., 1714.

IV—William, (2) born about 1651, died in 1696, left no male issue.

V—Hancock, (2) see page 42.

VI—Elizabeth, (2) no data whatever.

VII—Anne, (2) no data as to date of birth or date of death.

All that is known is that she married Thomas Youell of "Nominy in ye County of Westmoreland," and probably left issue.

VIII—Charles, (2) see page 44.

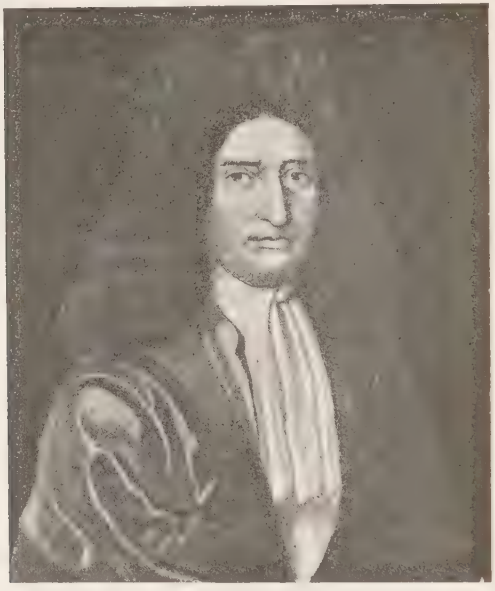
## SECOND GENERATION

### John Lee.

JOHN (2), heir at law, eldest son of Richard 1, was born about 1645, in what is now Gloucester County, Va. He was educated at Oxford and entered Queen's College, July 2nd, 1658, and graduated an A. B., April 30th, 1662; he then studied medicine and probably returned to Virginia with his father in 1664, as we have a record of his being in Northumberland County April 20th of that year. He was seated in Westmoreland County in September, 1666, and a year later was a member of the "committee of the association of Westmoreland, Northumberland and Stafford Counties." This committee was appointed for the defence of the Northern Neck against the Indians.

March 28th, 1672, Sir William Berkley appointed him Sheriff of Westmoreland County and the next day commissioned him a Justice of the Peace. He was Burgess from Westmoreland County in 1673, and the same year we find him appointed on a commission with Col. John Washington and others to "arrange the boundry line between Lancaster and Northumberland Counties." He died in the fall of 1673, and is probably buried at Mount Pleasant.

He left no issue.



**Richard Lee.**

Richard (2), the second son of Richard 1, was the eldest son to leave male issue in Virginia. He was born in 1647 at "Paradise" in Gloucester County and died March 12, 1714, at "Mount Pleasant" in Westmoreland County.

On the death of John in 1673, Richard became heir at law to his father, and it may be of interest to estimate the land owned by the emigrant and inherited through John by Richard.

A comparison of several wills and other records shows it to have been about 20,000 acres, divided among the old estates as follows: Mount Pleasant

2,600 acres, Lee Hall 2,600 acres, Ditchly 904 acres, Cobbs Hall 600 acres, Stratford 6,500 acres. In the case of Stratford, Thomas Lee probably added to the original acreage. Phillip Lee received about 3,000 acres in Maryland, and 4,000 acres were bequeathed to Richard's daughter, Ann Fitzhugh. The rest of Richard's estate was left to be divided between his four sons.

Richard Lee was educated at Oxford and was offered a high place in the church if his father would let him stay in England. The offer was refused as the old gentleman was determined to establish all his children in Virginia.

He spent most of his life in study, and usually wrote his notes in Greek, Hebrew or Latin.

He was a member of the Council of Virginia and held many other offices of honor and profit. He was in the Council in 1676, 1680-83-88--1692-98.

He was Burgess in 1677. In 1680 he was Colonel of the Horse in Westmoreland, Northumberland, and Stafford Counties.

In 1699 he was Naval Officer and receiver of Virginia dutys for the River Potomac, which included the Counties of Westmoreland, Northumberland and Stafford.

In "Bacon's Rebellion" Richard Lee was captured, and in a report to the English Government dated March 15th, 1677-8, we find the following: "Major Richard Lee, a loyal discreet person worthy of the place to which he was lately advanced of being one of his Majesties Council in Virginia, as to his losses we are credibly informed they were very great and that he was imprisoned by Bacon above seven weeks

together, at least 100 miles from his own home whereby he received great prejudice in his health by hard usage and very greatly in his whole Estate by his absence."

In a letter to the justices of Westmoreland Court, recorded August 15th, 1677, he mentions his imprisonment and laments his poor health. "And about this time twelve months, some three or four days before I was taken prisoner," and adds that he had not been "so well in health as I could wish."

Governor Spotswood described Richard Lee as "a gentleman of as fair a character as any in the country for his exact justice, honesty and unexceptional loyalty. In all the stations wherein he has served in this government, he has behaved himself with great integrity and sufficiency and when his advanced age would no longer permit him to execute to his own satisfaction the duty of Naval Officer of the same district, I thought I could not better reward his merit than by bestowing that employment on his son."

(Spotswood, 178.)

Richard Lee married in 1674, Laetitia, the eldest daughter of Henry Corbin and Alice Eltonhead, his wife. Laetitia was born in 1657, and died on October 6th, 1706. Their tombstone is still to be seen at "Mt. Pleasant;" it is a very large slab of white marble. The inscription has been almost effaced, which is not to be wondered at, as it has been exposed to the weather for over two hundred years. It rested on a low brick foundation which has partially fallen. The wall, which once surrounded this graveyard, can now be traced by removing a little

earth. It enclosed a lot of about 20x25 feet, and was located some three hundred yards in the rear of the first mansion. Some bricks scattered about indicate where the old house stood.

Bishop Meade visited this spot some years ago and wrote of it: "From a tomb stone in the Burnt House Fields at Mount Pleasant, Westmoreland County, where are yet to be seen the foundations of large buildings, is the following:

"Hic conditur corpus Richardi Lee, Armigeri, nati in Virginia, filii Richardi Lee, generosi, et antiqua familia, in Merton-Regis, in comitatu Salopiensi, oriundi.

"In magistratum obeundo boni publici studiosissimi, in literis Graecis et Latinis et aliis humanioris literaturae disciplinis versatissimi.

"Deo, quem, summa observantia semper coluit, animam tranquillus reddidit XII. mo. die Martii, anno MDCCXIV, aetat LXVIII.

"Hic, juxta, situm est corpus Laetitiae ejusdem uxoris fidae, filiae Henrici Corbyn, generosi, liberorum matris amantissimae, pietate erga Deum, charitate erga egenos, benignitate erga omnes insignis. Obiit Octob. die vi, MDCCVI, aetatis XLIX.

Translated, it reads;

"Here lieth the body of Richard Lee, Esq., born in Virginia, son of Richard Lee, Gentleman, descended of an ancient family of Merton-Regis, in Shropshire. While he exercised the office of magistrate he was a zealous promotor of the public good.

"He was very skillful in the Greek and Latin lan-

guages and other parts of polite learning. He quietly resigned his soul to God, whom he always devoutly worshipped, on the 12th day of March, in the year 1714, in the 68th year of his age.

"Near by is interred the body of Laetitia, his faithful wife, daughter of Henry Corbyn, Gentleman. A most affectionate mother, she was always distinguished by piety toward God, charity to the poor, and kindness to all. She died on the sixth day of October, 1706, in the 49th year of her age."

Richard Lee's will, dated March 3rd, 1714; was probated in Westmoreland County, April 27th, 1715.

**Laetitia Corbin Lee.**

Wife of Richard Lee.

Richard and Laetitia Lee had seven children. They were:

I—John 3. Baptized 3d day of Xber, 1678, died in infancy.

II—Richard 3. See page 45.

III—Philip 3. See page 46.

IV—Francis 3. Nothing is known of his life, but he died without issue on his estate "Paradise," about 1749.

V—Thomas 3. See page 47.

VI—Henry 3. See page 67.

VII—Anne 3. Born about 1693 and died in 1732. Married first Col. William Fitzhugh of "Eagle's Nest," King George County, and by him had one son and two daughters. She was the great great grandmother of Rev. Wm. Meade, Episcopal Bishop in Virginia. After the death of her husband in 1713-14, she married Captain Daniel McCarty of "the Parish of Cople in the county of Westmoreland."

## Hancock Lee.

Founder of the Ditchley Branch.

Hancock Lee (2), fifth son of Richard 1, was born at Dividing Creek, Northumberland County, in 1653, and was the founder of the Ditchley Branch. He married first in 1675, Mary, daughter of William Kendall of Northampton County, and settled there about the time of his marriage. He was a Justice of that County in 1677. About 1686 he returned to Northumberland County, and was a Justice there in 1687-1699, and Burgess from Northumberland in 1688. June 3, 1699, he was appointed "Naval Officer and Collector of Virginia Dutys in Northumberland County."

The Northern Neck land records show that Hancock patented land as follows: 1,100 acres in Richmond county, April 18th, 1704; 570 acres on both sides of Rappahannock Horsepen Run and adjoining his own land, May 21st, 1705; 1,353 acres in Rich-

mond county, June 6th, 1704; 460 acres on the north side of the Occoquan in Stafford county November 2nd, 1707; 1,750 acres at the heads of the branches of Chapowamsic in Stafford, adjoining the land of Capt. Thomas Harrison, February 10th, 1707. Hancock Lee, son of Hancock Lee, deceased, patented 1,025 acres on Wolf Run in Stafford, for which Hancock Lee, the elder, had obtained a warrant, 1708, and by a codicil to his will, December 31st, 1706, gave to his son the said Hancock, March 6th, 1709-10. In 1678, Hancock Lee, gent., obtained a patent for 268 acres in Accomac county.

His second wife was Sarah, daughter of Col. Allerton, of Westmoreland, and granddaughter of Isaac Alerton who came over in the "Mayflower."

Hancock Lee died May 25, 1709, and was buried at Ditchley.

Hancock and Mary (Kendall) Lee (his first wife) had three children.

I—William (3), born prior to 1682, and died prior to 1706, without issue.

II—Anna (3), born prior to Jan. 5, 1682, and was living as late as October, 1754. She was twice married, first, to William Armistead and second, to William Eustace, and had issue by both.

III—Richard (3), born at Ditchley, August 18, 1691 and died and was buried there in 1740. He was Justice for Northumberland County in 1714, and Clerk of the County from 1716 to 1735.

He married Judith Steptoe, and left issue.

Hancock and Sarah (Allerton) Lee (his second wife) had four children.

IV—Isaac (3), born in 1707, and died in England in 1727 without issue.

V—John (3), born about 1709 and died August 11, 1789, in Orange county. Left no issue.

VI—Hancock (3), born 1709, married in 1733, Mary, daughter of Col. Henry Willis, of Fredericksburg, and by her had seven children.

VII—Elizabeth (3), born 1709, probably the twin of Hancock. She married Zachary Taylor, and had four children.

---

### Charles Lee.

Founder of Cobb's Hall Branch.

Charles (2), eighth child of Richard 1, born about 1656 at "Cobb's Hall" where he lived, died and was buried. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Thos. Medstand, of Lancaster County about 1676.

Charles was Justice of Northumberland County in 1687-1699. He had two sons and two daughters.

I—Thomas (3), born about 1679—died 1735, was Justice for Lancaster County in 1712, and Sheriff in 1714. He married and left issue.

II—Charles, born——died in 1740-1, married Elizabeth Pinkard, and had six children.

III—Leeanna, probably married William Jones in 1707, and had issue.

IV—Elizabeth, of her history nothing is known.

## THIRD GENERATION

### Richard Lee.

RICHARD (3), second son of Richard 2, (Richard 1,) born about 1678-9. About 1710 he went to London and settled there as a Virginia merchant in partnership with his mother's brother, Thomas Corbin. He heired his father's estate, for, on November 5th, 1716, "Richard Lee, of London, son of Richard Lee, of Cople Parish in Virginia," leased to Reubin Welch, Thomas Lee and Henry Lee the 2,600 acres whereupon his father had lived (Mount Pleasant), "yielding and paying therefore the yearly rent of one pepper corn only on the feast day of the birth of our Lord God."

He married in England an heiress by the name of Martha Silk, and had by her one son and two daughters, all of whom went to Virginia and settled.

I—George (4), see page 69.

II—Lettice (4), born in London about 1715. She married about 1737, Col. John Corbin, of Essex county, Virginia, and died Jan. 15, 1768.

III—Martha, born in London about 1716, and married first, Major George Turberville, of Hickory Hill, Westmoreland county. After his death in 1742, she married Captain William Fitzhugh, of Maryland.

### Philip Lee.

Philip (3), third son of Richard 2, (Richard 1), born in Westmoreland about 1681, and moved to Maryland in 1700, was a member of the Council then a Justice of the Peace. He lived at "Blenheim," Prince George County, Md., and died in April, 1744. He married Sarah, daughter of Hon. Thomas Brooks. They had probably eight children:

1—Richard (4)
2—Francis (4)
3—Philip (4)
4—Thomas (4)
5—Arthur (4)
6—Anne (4)
7—Sarah (4)
8—Eleanor (4)

After her death, in 1724, he married Elizabeth, the widow of Henry Sewell, and had nine children:

9—Hannah (4)
10—Lettice (4)
11—Elizabeth (4)
12—Alice (4)
13—Hancock (4)
14—John (4)
15—Corbin (4)
16—George (4)
17—Margaret (4)

**Col. Thomas Lee.**

Thomas (3), the fifth son of Richard 2, (Richard 1) was born at "Mount Pleasant," Westmoreland County, in 1690, died at Stratford in the same county, November 14, 1750. With but a "common Virginia education, yet having strong natural parts, long after he was a man he learned the languages without any assistance but his own genius, and became a tolerable adept in Greek and Latin..... This Thomas, by his Industry and Parts, acquired a considerable fortune, for, being a younger, with many children, his paternal estate was very small. He

was also appointed of the Council, and though he had very few acquaintances in England, he was so well known by reputation that upon his receiving a loss by fire, the late Queen Caroline sent him over a bountiful present out of her own Privy Purse. Upon the late Sir William Gooch being recalled, who had been Governor of Virginia, Thomas Lee became President and Commander-in-Chief over the Colony, in which station he continued for some time, till the King thought proper to appoint him Governor of the Colony, but he died in 1750, before his commission got over to him."

The fire above referred to did not take place at Stratford, as many suppose, as no record has ever been found of any fire there; but in an old manuscript we find that the eldest son of the immigrant (which was John,) moved to "Westmoreland and established himself at Mount Pleasant, on the River Potomack. The large brick house, largely enclosed by a brick wall, was burned down, and another was built on the surrounding heights of the Potomac."

This fire must have occurred between 1716 and 1730. Thomas Lee obtained a lease of "Mount Pleasant" in 1716, and lived there until he built the Stratford mansion, and we find frequent mention of the burnt house field, evidently showing that the fire had been so serious that the field had been named as a record of the disaster.

Thomas Lee was, for years, a Burgess from Westmoreland County, a member of the Council and, later, its President, and from September 5th, 1749 until his death, Acting Governor of the Colony. In

May, 1744, he was appointed one of a commission to treat with the Iroquois Indians for the settlement of lands west of the Allegheny Mountains.

The conferences with the Indians were begun at Lancaster, Pa., June 22d, 1744. A record of the meeting states that wine and punch, as well as the customary pipe, were handed around. After the Indians had partaken, the conference was opened by a speech from the Governor of Pennsylvania.

During these conferences, one of the Indian chiefs (showing they were not behind their pale face brother in liking "the fire water") said: "You tell us you beat the French, if so, you must have taken a great deal of Rum from them, and can better spare us some of that liquor to make us rejoice with you in the Victory." "The Governor and Commissioners ordered a Dram of Rum to be given to each in a SMALL Glass, calling it A FRENCH GLASS." The next day the Indians demanded more of the rum, this time in LARGE ENGLISH GLASSES. "The Indians gave, in their Order, five Yo-bahs; and the honorable Governor and Commissioners calling for some Rum and some middle size Wine Glasses, drank health to the Great King of England and the Six Nations and put an end to the Treaty by three loud Huzzas, in which all the Company joined."

Mr. Whitham Marshe, Secretary for the Maryland Commissioners, wrote an account of these conferences (at Lancaster on the 28th of June, 1744,) stating: "The Commissioners of Virginia had a private treaty with the Chiefs, in the Court house, and Col. Lee made them a speech." An account of the proceedings and the treaty were printed by Benjamin

Franklin, Philadelphia, 1744; from which rare work the following copy of Thomas Lee's address has been taken:

The Commissioners of Virginia desired the Interpreter to let the Indians know that their Brother Assaragoa was now going to give his reply to their answer to his first speech, delivered the day before in the forenoon.

"Sachims and Warriors of the Six United Nations,

"We are now come to answer what you said to us yesterday, since what we said to you before on the Part of the Great King, our Father, has not been satisfactory. You have gone into old Times, and so must we. It is true that the Great King holds Virginia by Right of Conquest, and the Bounds of the Conquest to the Westward is the Great Sea.

"If the Six Nations have made any Conquests over Indians that may at any time have lived on the Westside of the Great Mountains of Virginia, yet they never possessed any Lands that we ever heard of. That Part was altogether deserted, and free for any People to enter upon, as the People of Virginia have done, by Order of the Great King, very justly, as well as by ancient Right, and by its being freed from the Possession of any other, and from any Claim of even you the Six Nations, our Brethren, until within these eight years. The first Treaty between the Great King, in behalf of his Subjects in Virginia, and you, that we can find, was made at Albany by Col. Henry Coursey, seventy years since; this was a Treaty of Friendship when the first Covenant Chain was made, when we and you became Brethren.

"The next Treaty was also made at Albany, about fifty-eight years ago, by the Lord Howard, Governor of Virginia; then you declared yourselves Subjects to the Great King, our Father, and gave up to him all your Lands for his protection. This you own in a Treaty made by the Governor of New York with you at the same place, in the year 1687, and you express yourselves in these Words:

" 'Brethren, you tell us the King of England is a very great King and why should not you join with us in a very just Cause, when the French join with our enemies in an unjust Cause? O, Brethren, we see the Reason of this; for the French would fain kill us all and when that is done, they would carry all the Beaver Trade to Canada, and the Great King of England would lose the Land likewise; and therefore, O Great Sachim, beyond the Great Lakes, awake, and suffer not those poor Indians, that have given themselves and their lands under your Protection, to be destroyed by the French without a Cause.'

"The last Treaty we shall speak to you about is that made at Albany by Governor Spotswood, which you have not recited as it is; For the white People, your Brethren of Virginia, are in no Article of that Treaty prohibited to pass and settle to the Westward of the Great Mountains. It is the Indians tributary to Virginia, that are restrained, as you and your tributary Indians are from passing to the Eastward of the same Mountains, or to the Southward of the Cohongorooton, and you agree to this Article in these Words: 'That the Great River of Potowmack and the high Ridge of Mountains, which extend all along the Frontiers of Virginia to the Westward of

the present Settlements of that Colony, shall be forever the established Boundaries between the Indians subject to the Dominion of Virginia, and the Indians belonging and depending on the Five Nations; so that neither our Indians shall not, on any Pretence whatsoever, pass to the Northward or Westward of the said Boundaries, without having to produce a Passport under the Hand and Seal of the Governor or Commander-in-Chief of Virginia; nor you Indians to pass to the Southward or Eastward of said Boundaries, without a Passport in like manner from the Governor or Commander-in-chief of New York.'

"And what Right can you have to Lands that you have no Right to walk upon, but upon certain Conditions? It is true, you have not observed this part of the Treaty, and your Brethren of Virginia have not insisted upon it with a due strictness, which has occasioned some mischief.

"This Treaty has been sent to the Governor of Virginia by Order of the Great King, and is what we must rely upon, and being in writing is more certain than your memory. That is the way the white people have of preserving transactions of every kind, and transmitting them down to their children's children for ever, and all disputes among them are settled by this faithful kind of evidence, and must be the rule between the Great King and you. This Treaty you Sachims and Warriors signed some years after the same Governor Spotswood, in the Right of the Great King, had been with some people of Virginia, in possession of these very lands, which you have set up your late claim to.....

"Brethren, this dispute is not between Virginia

and you; it is setting up your right against the Great King, under whose grants the people you complain of, are settled. Nothing but a command from the Great King can remove them; they are too powerful to be removed by any force of you, our Brethren; and the Great King, as our common father, will do equal justice to all his children; wherefore we do believe they will be confirmed in their possessions.

"As to the Road you mention, we intend to prevent any occasion for it, by making peace between you and the Southern Indians, a few years since, at a considerable expense to the Great King, which you confirmed at Albany. It seems by your being at war with the Catawbas that it has not been long kept by you. However, if you desire a road, we will agree upon the terms of the Treaty made with Col. Spotswood, and your people, behaving themselves orderly like friends and brethren, shall be used in their passage through Virginia with the same kindness as they are when they pass through the lands of your Brother Onas. This, we hope, will be agreed to by you, our brethren, and we will abide by the promise made to you yesterday.

"We may proceed to settle what we are to give you for any right you may have, or have had, to all the lands to the Southward and Westward of the lands of your brother, the Governor of Maryland, and your Brother Onas; Tho' we are informed that the Southern Indians claim these very lands that you do. We are desirous to live with you, our brethren, according to the old chain of friendship, to settle all these matters fairly and honestly; and, as a

pledge of our sincerity, we give you this Belt of Wampum."

(Which was received with the usual Ceremony.)

As a result of this conference, a Treaty was made by which the Indians, in consideration of 400 pounds stirling paid and a promise of further payments, granted the Virginians the right to settle the land west of the mountains to the Ohio River. The two following letters from Thomas Lee, then acting as Governor of the Colony, to Governor Hamilton, of Pennsylvania, are in relation to the settling of these lands:

"STRATFORD, 22d November, 1749.

"SIR,

"I had the Pleasure to congratulate you on your Arrival to your Government by the Favour of my Friend Mr. Strettell; I had great satisfaction when I heard of your being advanced to that Honorable Station, because I had a very great Esteem for You ever since I had the Honour to know You.

"Upon Sr. William Gooch's leaving this Colony the Government here has devolved upon me as eldest Councellor, and I hope the good Agreement that will subsist between us will be of service to both Governments.

"I am sorry that so soon I am obliged to complain to You of the insiduous behaviour, as I am informed, of some of the Traders from your Province, tending to disturb the Peace of this Colony and to alienate the Affections of the Indians from Us.

"His Majesty has been graciously pleased to grant to some Gentleman and Merchants of London and some of both sorts of this Colony, a large quantity of Land West of the Mountains, the design of this Grant and one Condition of it is to erect and Garrison a Fort to protect our trade (from the French) and that of the neighboring Colonies, and by fair open Trade to engage the Indians in Affection to his Majesty's Subjects to supply them with what they want so that they will be under no necessity to apply to the French, and to make a very strong Settlement on the Frontiers of this Colony, all which his Majesty has approved and directed his Governor here to assist the said company in carrying their laudable design into Execution; but your Traders have prevailed with the Indians on the Ohio to believe that the Fort is to be a bridle for them, and that the Roads which the Company are to make is to let in the Catawbas upon them to destroy them, and the Indians naturally jealous are so possessed with the truth of these insinuations that they threaten our Agents if they survey or make those roads that they have given leave to make, and by this the carrying the King's Grant into execution is at present impracticable. Yet these are the Lands purchased of the Six Nations by the Treaty of Lancaster.

"I need not say any more to prevail with you to take the necessary means to put a stop to these mischievous practices of those Traders. We are informed that there is Measures designed by the Court of France that will be mischievous to these Colonys which will in Prudence oblige us to unite and not

divide the Interest of the King's Subjects on the Continent.

I am with Esteem & Respect," etc.

"Stratford, 20th December, 1749. Sir, Since the Letter I had the Pleasure to write You I have found it necessary to write to the Lords of the Treasury desiring their Lordships to obtain the King's Order for running the dividing Line betwixt this Colony and Yours, else many difficultys will arise upon the seating the Large Grants to the Westward of the Mountains. In the case of the Earl of Granville and Lord Fairfax this method was taken and Commissioners appointed by his Majesty and those noble Lords. I thought it proper to acquaint you with this Step that there might be no Surprize and that a matter of such Consequence may meet with as little Delay as the Nature of it will admit. I am with all possible Esteem," etc.

The grant referred to was that of 500,000 acres situated in the present counties of Jefferson and Columbiana in Ohio, and in Brooke county, West Virginia. This was probably the first effort of the English to settle any of the territory "Westward of the Mountains." It is said that Thomas Lee was the originator of the project; he was certainly the first president of the company. At his death, he was succeeded by Lawrence Washington.

Though Thomas Lee may have been a person of some influence in his day, he is known rather for his many distinguished sons than for his own individual merit, for it has seldom fallen to the lot of

any man to rear six sons who took an active and patriotic part in the service of their country, at least four of whom were distinguished for their unselfish patriotism during the Revolutionary struggle. Of these sons Mr. Campbell has written:

"As Westmoreland, their native county, is distinguished above all others in Virginia as the birthplace of genius, so perhaps no other Virginian could boast of so many distinguished sons as President Lee."

President John Adams (who was not usually lavish in his praise of any one) wrote in after years to Richard Bland Lee:

QUINCY, 11 August, 1819.

"I thank you for your oration on the red-letter day in our national calendar, which I have read with mingled emotions. An invisible spirit seemed to suggest to me, in my left ear, 'Nil admirari, nil contemnere;' another spirit, at my right elbow, seemed to whisper in my ear, 'Digito vompesce labellum.' But I will open my lips, and will say that your modesty and delicacy have restrained you from doing justice to your own name, that band of brothers, intrepid and unchangeable, who, like the Greeks at Thermopylae, stood in the gap, in the defence of their country, from the first glimmering of the Revolution in the horizon, through all its rising light, to its perfect day.

"Thomas (Ludwell) Lee, on whose praises Chancellor Wythe delighted to dwell, who has often said to me that Thomas Lee was the most popular man in Virginia, and the delight of the eyes of every Virginian, but who would not engage in public life; Richard Henry Lee, whose merits are better known

and acknowledged, and need no illustration from me; Francis Lightfoot Lee, a man of great reading well understood, of sound judgment, and inflexible perseverance in the cause of his country; William Lee, who abandoned an advantageous establishment in England from attachment to his country, and was able and faithful in her service; Arthur Lee, a man of whom I can not think without emotion; a man too early in the service of his country to avoid making a multiplicity of enemies; too honest, upright, faithful, and intrepid to be popular; too often obliged by his principles and feelings to oppose Machiavellian intrigues, to avoid the destiny he suffered. This man never had justice done him by his country in his lifetime, and I fear he never will have by posterity. His reward cannot be in this world."

Life and Works of John Adams, Vol.X. 382.

**Stratford Hall.**

Where Thomas Lee lived during the first years of his married life is a matter of some doubt. It seems most probable that his first home was at "Mt. Pleasant," and that the loss by fire, of which his son William wrote, was the destruction of that mansion. It is certain that the house at "Mt. Pleasant" was burned early in the last century, but there is no evidence of a fire ever having occurred at Stratford. If Queen Caroline gave Thomas Lee a "bountiful present out of her own privy purse," while she was Queen, she must have given it between 1727 and 1737, as she became Queen in the former year and died in the latter. As Princess of Wales, she would

hardly have possessed sufficient means to make a large present. It seems, therefore, highly probable that the Stratford house was erected about 1725-30, hardly later, as it is said that all of Thomas Lee's sons were born in that mansion.

"An old mansion has been declared to be a history in itself; its rooms being the chapters; its stories, volumes; its furniture, illustrations, and its inmates the characters. Such a mansion is certainly an illustration of the customs, habits, and mode of life of the period in which it was built and inhabited. And this thought seems to be applicable to Stratford for many reasons. Since it was erected upon the historic banks of the Potomac, American history has been made, and some prominent actors in its history were born under its roof. At the time of its building, the American Colonies were few in number, and weak in strength, hardly able to defend their homes from the marauding Indian. Spotswood and his daring followers had only recently crossed "the Great Mountains," and looked upon the beautiful valley of Virginia. The imagination of to-day can hardly realize that there was ever a time when such a trip could be considered a daring venture, and the suggestion of such an idea seems a joke. "Early in his administration," writes Howe, "Spotswood, at the head of a troop of horse, effected a passage over the Blue Ridge, which had previously been considered an impenetrable barrier to the ambition of the whites, and discovered the beautiful valley which lies beyond. In commemoration of this event, he received from the king the honor of knighthood, and was presented with a minature golden horse-shoe, on which was inscribed the motto, SIC JURAT

TRANSCENDERE MONTES—"Thus he swears to cross the mountains." Since that time a new nation has been born and grown to manhood; from infantile dimensions, a narrow strip of inhabited land, hugging the Atlantic as if afraid to loosen its hold on the mother country, its inhabitants have extended from ocean to ocean, from the great lakes to the gulf. The war of the Revolution, with its heroes and patriots, has come and gone. All these changes has Stratford witnessed, yet it remains to-day solid and strong, a monument of the past age in which it was erected, and had it no other claim to distinction, it might surely rank as one of America's historic mansions. But it possesses much greater claims than mere age; as the birthplace of two signers of the Declaration of Independence, and of two others who represented their country at the courts of Europe, during the earlier years of that struggle, it is hallowed by memories which no other mansion in America can share. There, too, on the 19th of January, 1807, was born Robert E. Lee, an event well worthy of being the last act in the great drama, of which Stratford has been the stage." Lee of Va. 114-115.

Bishop Meade wrote many years ago: "Some mournful thoughts will force themselves upon us when considering the ruins of churches, of mansions, and of cemeteries, in Westmoreland. By reason of the worth, talents, and patriotism which once adorned it, it was called the Athens of Virginia. But how few of the descendants of those who once were its ornaments are now to be found in it! Chantilly, Mt. Pleasant, Wakefield are no more. Stratford alone remains. Where now are the venerable churches?

Pope's Creek, Round Hill, Nomini, Leeds, where are they? Yecomico only survives the general wreck."

Stratford house, with its solid walls and massive, rough-hewn timbers, seems rather to represent strength and solidity than elegance or comfort. Its large rooms, with numerous doors and windows, heated only by the large open fireplaces, would today scarcely be considered habitable. Nor would the modern housewife care to have her kitchen placed out in the yard some fifty or sixty feet from her dining room. The house was built in the shape of the letter H, the cross line being a large hall room of some twenty-five or thirty feet, serving as the connecting link between the two wings, these wings being about thirty feet wide and sixty deep. The house contains some eighteen large rooms, exclusive of the hall. The view given here represents the rear, but the front is practically the same, the small stairway leads up to the rear door of the hall room. The room to the right, as one faces the picture, is the bed room in which tradition states that Richard Henry Lee and his brothers were born; also, Gen. Robert E. Lee. The hall room was, in those days, used as the library and general sitting room, especially in summer, being large, airy, well lighted and ventilated. The ceiling is very high, dome shaped, the walls are panelled in oak, with the book cases set in them; back and front are doors, leading into the garden, flanked on either side by windows, as shown in the illustration. On the other two sides of this hall, between the book cases, are two doors, opening into the wings, Outside, at the four corners of the house, are four out-houses, used as servants quarters, laundry, kitchen, and such like pur-

poses. At the corner of the house, to the right of the picture given here, but too far off to be seen, was the kitchen, with its immense fireplace, which by actual measurement was found to be twelve feet wide, six high, and five deep, evidently capable of roasting a fair-sized ox. Lying on the grass, there is seen a large, old-fashioned shell or cannon ball, which tradition says was once fired at the house by an English warship.

The portions of the stable yet remaining show it to have been very large; the kitchen garden was surrounded by the usual brick wall, much remaining at the present time. At the foot of the kitchen garden are the remains of the large brick burial vault, of which Bishop Meade wrote: "I have been assured by Mrs. Eliza Turner, who was there at the time, that it was built by General Henry Lee. The cemetery (vault) is much larger than any other in the Northern Neck, consisting of several apartments or alcoves for different branches of the family. Instead of an arch over them there is a brick house, perhaps twenty feet square, covered in. A floor covers the cemetery. In the centre is a trap door, through which you descend to the apartments below." This brick house having fallen into ruin, a late proprietor of Stratford had it torn down and the bricks heaped up into a mound, which, covered with earth and surmounted by the tombstone of Thomas Lee, would serve as a fitting mark for the unknown dead reposing underneath."

Thomas Lee's will was dated Feb. 22nd, 1749, and probated in Westmoreland July 30th, 1751.

There has been some uncertainty as to the burial place of both Thomas Lee and his son, Richard

Henry; the former has always been thought to have been buried at Old Pope's Creek Church, and the latter at Chantilly, but an examination of their wills and other data proves most conclusively that both of them were buried in the "Old Burnt House Fields," at "Mt. Pleasant." It requires no proof to show that Richard Lee and Laetitia Corbin, his wife were buried at this place, as their tombstone is still to be seen there. Thomas Lee's wife died about a year before her husband, and of course had been duly buried; in his will he desired to be "buried between my Late Dearest wife and my Honored Mother, and that the bricks on the side next my wife may be moved and my coffin Placed as near hers as is possible, without moving or disturbing the remains of my Mother." This request proves that his wife had been buried very near the grave of his mother. There can be no doubt that Thomas Lee was buried, as he desired, beside his wife, for ONE SLAB covered the two graves, and has on it the following inscription, recently copied. The slab, now at Stratford, is in perfect condition, and the inscription as legible as when first cut:

Here lies Buried the Hon'ble Col. Thomas Lee, Who dyed 14 November, 1750; Aged 60 years; and his beloved wife, Mrs. Hannah Lee. She departed this life 25 January, 1749-50. Their monument is erected in the lower church of Washington Parish, in this County; five miles above their Country Seat, Stratford Hall.

As Old Pope's Creek church stood about five miles above Stratford, and was THE lower church of

Washington parish, it was evidently the one alluded to in the above quoted inscription.

The tombstone states that "their monument is erected in the lower church of Washington Parish in this County, five miles above their Country Seat, Stratford Hall." Fortunately, a copy of the inscription once on this monument has been preserved, in the writing of Richard Henry Lee; but, unfortunately, a part of the inscription is torn, so that the name of the "family burying place" is lost.

This Monument is erected to the Memory of the Honourable Col. Thomas Lee, Commander-in-chief and President of His Majesties Council for this Colony, descended from the very ancient and Honourable Family of Lees in Shropshire in England, who dyed November 14, 1750, aged 60 years; and of the Hon'ble Mrs. Hannah Lee, his Wife, by Philip Ludwell Lee, their eldest son, as a just and dutyfull Tribute to so excellent a Father and Mother, Patterns of Conjugal Virtue. They are buried eighteen miles from this in the family burying place, called the old .....in Cople Parish, in this County.

(This slab cannot be found, but it is rumored that when the church was destroyed, some one unknown used it with the reverse side up for a hearth stone before an open fire place and may some day be discovered.)—Ed.

No one can well doubt that the "family burying place" was in the old Burnt House Fields, at "Mt. Pleasant." This was the "one acre where my Hon'd Father is Buryed" that Thomas Lee, in his will desired should not "be disposed of upon any pretense whatsoever."

**Hannah (Ludwell) Lee.**

Thomas and Hannah (Ludwell) Lee had the following issue: names and dates were copied from the family Bible of Richard Henry Lee, who stated that he had copied from that of his father at Stratford:

I. Richard (4), born June 17, 1723, probably at Mt. Pleasant, died unmarried, before his father.

II. Philip Ludwell (4), see page 70.

III. Hannah (4), born at Stratford Feb. 6, 1728, married Gawin Corbin, and left a daughter, Martha.

IV. John (4), born at Stratford March 28, 1729, and died the same day.

V. Lucy (4), born at Stratford, September 26, 1730, and died unmarried.

VI. Thomas Ludwell (4), see page 73.

VII. Richard Henry (4), see page 77.

VIII. Francis Lightfoot, see page 102.

IX. Alice (4), born at Stratford June 4, 1736, and died at Philadelphia, March 25, 1817, married in London, 1760, Dr. William Shippen, Jr.

X. William (4), see page 106.

XI. Arthur (4), see page 113.

---

### Henry Lee.

Henry (3), sixth son of Richard 2, (Richard 1), born about 1691, lived at "Lee Hall' on the Potomac. About 1724-25, he married Mary, daughter of Col. Richard Bland. On June 2, 1737, he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Westmoreland County Militia.

He died at "Lee Hall" in 1747.

It is not my purpose to include the collateral branches, but it is necessary in this case as this branch leads directly back to Stratford Hall.

Henry and Mary (Bland) Lee left four children:

I. John (4), born at "Lee Hall" about 1724, settled

in Essex County and was clerk of the courts there as early as 1745, and held the office until 1761. He represented Essex County as Burgess in 1762-63-64-65. On December 20, 1749, he married Mrs. Mary (Smith) Ball. He returned to Westmoreland County and lived at "Cabin Point" on the Potomac River where he died in 1767.

II. Richard (4), was born at "Lee Hall" about 1726. He was known as "Squire" Lee, and bore a prominent part in the affairs of his county. He was Burgess from Westmoreland in 1757-58-62-69-72-74, a member of the Convention of 1775-76; of the House of Delegates 1777-80-84-85-86-87-90-93. He was a justice of the peace, and Naval Officer for the "port of South Potomac." When about 60 years old he married his first cousin, Sally, daughter of Peter Poythress. He died in 1795, at "Lee Hall" and was, buried there. They had two sons and three daughters.

1—Richard 5 who died young and unmarried.

2—Mary 5, born Feb. 12, 1790, died 1848. In 1804, she married Thomas Jones, Esq., of Chesterfield County, and had issue.

3—Lettice 5 born 1792 and died 1827. In 1809 she married Dr. John Augustine Smith and had issue.

4—Richardia 5 born 1795. In 1815 married Presley Cox and had issue.

III. Henry (4), see page 132.

IV. Letitia (4), born about 1730-1, married Col. William Ball, of Lancaster County, in 1746-7. She died in 1788, and left two sons and one daughter.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

### George Lee.

GEORGE 4, first son of Richard 3, (Richard 2, Richard 1,) born in London August 18, 1714, and came to Virginia about 1736 and settled at "Mt. Pleasant" in Westmoreland County. On Sept. 30, 1738, he married Judith Wormley. She died June 8, 1751, leaving a daughter, Elizabeth. George Lee married again December 17, 1752, Mrs. Anne (Fairfax) Washington, widow of Lawrence Washington, of Mount Vernon. Lawrence Washington was half brother to George Washington, to whom he bequeathed Mount Vernon after his widow's death. She died March 14, 1761, and he, November 19, 1761. He was deputy clerk of Westmoreland from 1740 to 1742 and clerk from that date to his death. He was Burgess in 1748-1751, and a justice in 1737.

George Lee and Judith (Wormley) Lee his first wife had:

I—Richard 5 born August 13, 1739, died in infancy.

II—Elizabeth 5 born Nov. 21, 1750, died unmarried May 19, 1828.

By Anne (widow of Lawrence Washington) his second wife he had:

III—George Fairfax 5 born at Mount Pleasant, Westmoreland Co., Feb. 24, 1754, died there Dec.

1804. He married..... (widow of Dr. Travers and had several children but none lived to marry except a daughter Louisa who married John Tasker Carter and died without issue. He is buried with his wife and children at Mount Pleasant Garden, Westmoreland County.

IV—Lancelot 5 born at Mt. Pleasant Westmoreland County, Jan. 19, 1756. By his first wife Mary (Jones) Lee he had:

1 Lancelot Bathurst 6 who died unmarried in Charleston, S. C.
2 Sallie Fairfax 6 who married Robert Sangster.
3 Elizabeth 6 who married Col. James Chipley.
4 Nancy 6 who married Richard Cockrell.
5 Thomas 6 married but wife unknown family tradition claims he had three sons, George W. Lee 7, Philip De Catesby Lee 7 and Wm. F. Lee 7.

V—William 5 born Nov. 17, 1758 died unmarried May 19, 1838.

### Hon. Philip Ludwell Lee.

Philip Ludwell Lee 4 second child of Thomas 3 (Richard 2, Richard 1,) was born at Stratford Feb. 24, 1726-7, and died Feb. 21, 1775. Tradition has always claimed that all the sons of Thomas were born at Stratford.

Mr. Lee was educated in England and studied law at the "Inner Temple," London.

As heir-at-law of his father, Philip Ludwell inherited the larger share of his estate, and was charged with the care and education of his younger broth-

ers. These lands were in Westmoreland, Northumberland, on the eastern shore of Maryland, two islands in the Potomac, and some lands up the river above the Falls of the Potomac. It has been said that Thomas Lee, many years before, had taken up land on the upper Potomac, above the sight of the present location of Georgetown, believing that some day the Colonies would become independent of Great Britain, and that the new nation would locate its capital on the Potomac near these falls! This story seems rather improbable, one might have prophesied that the growing Colonies would one day form themselves into a new nation, but that one could so far in advance predict the location of its capital is rather unlikely. At any rate, prophet or no prophet, Thomas Lee did locate a claim only a few miles above the present city of Washington. (Lee of Va. 165-166.

In 1757, Loudoun County was formed from Fairfax, and included in its borders some of Philip Ludwell Lee's lands; "Leesburg, the county seat,..... was named from the Lee family, who were among the early settlers of the county; it was established in September, 1758, in the thirty-second year of the reign of George II. Mr. Nicholas Minor, who owned the sixty acres around the court-house, had them laid off into streets and lots, some of which, at the passage of the act, had been built upon. The act constituted the Hon. Philip Ludwell Lee, Esqr., Thomas Mason, Esqr., Francis Lightfoot Lee, James Hamilton, Nicholas Minor, Josiah Clapham, Aeneas Campbell, John Hugh, Francis Hague, and William West, gentlemen, the trustees of the town." (Howe's HISTORY OF VIRGINIA, 353.)

Philip Ludwell Lee was a member of the House of Burgesses (30th March, 1756), and succeeded his father as member of the Council; apparently he was the secretary of the Council on the 18th of June, 1770, when a "list of Books necessary for the Council Chamber" was made out by him; the list included reports of Parliament, histories, philosophical transactions, Demosthenes' orations, and the like.

Philip Ludwell Lee married (about 1761-2) Elizabeth, second daughter of James Steptoe, of Westmoreland, and left three children. His widow married Philip Richard Fendall, and died about June, 1789.

On the 19th of April 1782, the report of the appraisement and division of Philip Ludwell Lee's estate was filed; the land consisted of 6,595 acres, mentioned as "the Clifts, Stratford, and All Hallows;" the mansion house with its offices, and 1,800 acres were allotted Mrs. Fendall; the remaining two-thirds reserved for the two daughters, the son having died. On the 30th of May, 1780, 1,352 pounds sterling, currency, one-third dower, was paid to Philip Richard Fendall, for "Mrs. Fendall."

(Lee of Va. 167).

The children of Philip Ludwell and Elizabeth (Steptoe) Lee were:

I—Matilda 5, born at Stratford, married her cousin, Henry Lee, (Light Horse Harry).

II—Flora 5, born at Stratford, married her cousin, Ludwell Lee the second son of Richard Henry Lee, of Chantilly.

III—Philip 5, born Feb. 24, 1775, died in infancy.

### Thomas Ludwell Lee.

Thomas Ludwell 4, sixth child of Thomas 3, (Richard 2, Richard 1) born at Stratford, Dec. 13, 1730, and died at his home, "Bellevue," in Stafford County, April 13, 1778, of rheumatic fever. Little is recorded of his early life but he probably was educated in England, like most of his brothers, and, no doubt, studied law there.

Mr. Lee was spoken of as "the most popular man in Virginia, and the delight of the eyes of every Virginian." He was averse to public positions and held none outside of Virginia. At the time of his death he was one of the members of the General Court.

"Thomas Ludwell Lee and Richard Henry Lee were brothers. Thomas Ludwell, the elder of the two, held a conspicious position as a patriot and lawyer, and died before the close of the war, but not until he had filled the most responsible trusts with fidelity and honor. He had been a member of the House of Burgesses, was a member of the Convention of July and December, 1775, and was chosen a member of the Committee of Safety. He took his seat in the Convention now sitting as a member from Stafford, and was placed on the committee appointed to draft a declaration of rights, and a plan of government. On the organization of a new government under the Constitution, he was appointed one of the five Revisors, and later elected one of the five judges of the General Court." Lee of Va. 169.

Thomas Ludwell Lee was an ardent supporter of the Colonies against the encroachment of the British ministry, as the following extract from a letter

to his brother, Richard Henry Lee, then attending Congress at Philadelphia shows. Writing from Williamsburg, under date of May 18th, 1776, he said:

"Enclosed you have some pointed resolves which passed our convention to the infinite joy of the people here. The preamble is not to be admired in point of composition, nor has the resolve for independency that peremptory and decided air which I could wish. Perhaps the proviso, which reserves to this Colony the power of forming its own government, may be questionable as to its fitness. Would not a uniform plan of government prepared for America by the Congress and approved by the Colonies be a surer foundation of increasing harmony to the whole? However, such as they are, the exultation here was extreme. The British flag was immediately struck on the Capitol, and Continental hoisted in its room. The troops were drawn out, and we had a discharge of artillery and small arms. You have also a set of resolves offered by Col. M. Smith; but the first, which were proposed the second day by the President, for the debate lasted two days, were preferred. These he had formed from the resolves and preambles of the first day, baldy put together. Col. Mason came to town yesterday after the arrival of the post. I showed him your letter, and he thinks with me that your presence here is of the last consequence. He designs to tell you so by letter to-day. All your friends agree in this opinion. Col. Nelson is on his way to Congress, which removes the objection respecting a quorum of delegates. To form a plan of just and equal government would not perhaps be so very difficult; but to pre-

serve it from being mar'd with a thousand impertinences, from being in the end a jumble of discord, unintelligible parts, will demand the protecting hand of a master. I cannot recollect with precision the quantity of lead which we have received from the mines, though I think it about ten tons.

"The works are now carried on by the public on a large scale, and no doubt is entertained here that a full supply for the continent may be had from thence, by increasing the number of hands. In my next you shall have a more accurate acc't. The fast was observed with all due solemnity yesterday. The delegates met at the Capitol and went in procession to hear a sermon by appointment of the Convention. Corbin and Wormeley.....the first to an estate his father has in Caroline, the other to his plantation in Berkley. Adieu my dear Brother, give my love to Loudoun, and let us have the satisfaction to see you assisting in the great work of this convention."

The "resolves," which did not have the "peremptory and decided air" that Mr. Lee desired, were passed by the Virginia Convention on May 15th, 1776, and were as follows:

**Resolved,** That the delegates appointed to represent this Colony in General Congress, be instructed to propose to that respectable body, to declare the united colonies free and independent states, absolved from all allegiance to, or dependence on the crown or parliament of Great Britain; and that they give the assent of this Colony to such declaration, and whatever measures may be thought necessary by

Congress for forming foreign alliances, and a confederation of the colonies, at such time and in the manner that to them shall seem best: provided, that the power of forming governments for, and the regulations of the internal concerns of each colony, be left to the colonial legislatures.

Thomas Ludwell Lee married Mary, daughter of William Aylett, probably of Prince William. They had the following issue:

I—Thomas Ludwell 5, see page 139.

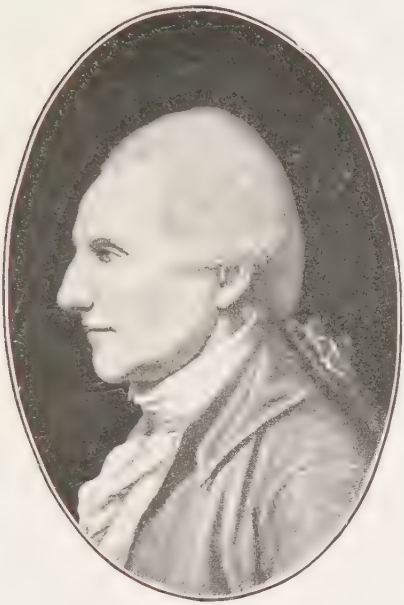
II—William Aylette 5, died young and unmarried.

III—George 5, see page 139.

IV—Anne Fenton 5, born...died...;married Jan. 3, 1782, Daniel Carroll Brent, of "Richland," Stafford County, and had twelve children.

V—Lucinda 5, born....died....; married Dr. John Dalrymple Orr, of Prince William County, and left issue.

VI—Rebecca 5, died unmarried.



**Richard Henry Lee.**

Richard Henry Lee 4, seventh child of Thomas 3 (Richard 2, Richard 1), was born at Stratford, Westmoreland County, Jan. 20, 1732, and died at his home, Chantilly, in the same county, on June 19, 1794. After a course of private tuition at home, Mr. Lee was sent to the Wakefield Academy, in Yorkshire, England; on leaving that school he made a brief tour of Northern Europe, and returned to Virginia, being then only nineteen years old. For some years, probably until his marriage, he resided with his eldest brother, at Stratford, and passed the time, it is said, in diligent reading of the ancient classics

and modern histories. Such a range of study seemed to be chosen, as if by intuition, to prepare him for the part he was destined afterward to take in the struggle between England and her American colonies. His taste for the classics was constantly displayed in after life by the frequent and appropriate quotations he made from them to enrich his diction or to fortify his argument.

The greater part of the estate left Mr. Lee by his father was located in Prince William County, but he continued after his marriage to reside in Westmoreland. It is said his eldest brother was so devoted to him that he would not consent to have him settle far away from Stratford. So, when Richard Henry was about to establish a home for himself, his brother insisted that he should build near Stratford, and leased him, for the purpose, the estate called "Chantilly." It appears this name was given it by Richard Henry, and that the estate was formerly known as "Hollis' Marsh." It was situated about three miles below Stratford, and also on the Potomac River. Later in life, Mr. Lee paid a rental for it to General Henry Lee, and mentions in his own will that he only held the estate on a lease.

When about twenty-three, Mr. Lee raised a company to join General Braddock in his ill-fated expedition against the French and Indians; their aid was declined by the haughty Englishman, who had no use for provincials. So, perhaps, Braddock preserved Mr. Lee's life for a future of greater usefulness. A few years later, when about twenty-five, Mr. Lee was appointed a Justice for Westmoreland, a position of influence and much sought after in those

days. He so impressed his colleagues on the bench with his special fitness for the duties of the position, that they petitioned the governor to antedate his commission that he might be chosen their presiding officer. It was about this date (1757) that he made his first appearance in the political arena, by being chosen a member of the House of Burgesses. He continued a member of that body, when not in Congress, until 1792, when he finally retired from active public life.

"Like his brother, Thomas Ludwell, he was oppressed with a natural diffidence, which was heightened by a contemplation of the dignified intellects who surrounded him, and for one or two sessions he took no part in their debates." His first effort in that body was a speech against the importation of slaves into the Colony; the proposition was "to lay so heavy a tax upon the importation of slaves as effectually to put an end to that iniquitous and disgraceful traffic within the Colony." This trade was continually the object of repressive legislation by the early Virginians. Mr. Lee's speech on this proposition proved him to possess keen foresight, and to have thus early discovered this dangerous rock, upon which the future Republic was destined to be so nearly wrecked. His opening words were:

"Sir, as the consequences of the determination we must make in the subject of this day's debate will greatly affect posterity, as well as ourselves, it surely merits our most serious attention. And well am I persuaded, Sir, that if it be so considered, it will appear both from reason and experience, that the importation of Slaves into this Colony has been and will

be attended with affects dangerous both to our political and moral interests. When it is observed that some of our neighboring Colonies, though much later than ourselves in point of settlement, are now far before us in improvement, to what, Sir, can we attribute this strange, this unhappy truth? The reason seems to be this: THAT WITH THEIR WHITES THEY IMPORT ARTS AND AGRICULTURE, WHILST WE WITH OUR BLACKS EXCLUDE BOTH." After alluding to the dangers of survile wars, etc., he added: "Nor, Sir, are these the only reasons to be urged against the importation. In my opinion, not the cruelties practiced in the conquest of Spanish America, not the savage barbarity of the Saracen, can be more big with atrocity than our cruel trade to Africa. There we encourage those poor, ignorant people to wage eternal war against each other; not nation against nation, but father against son, children against parents, and brothers against brothers, whereby parental, filial, and fraternal duty is terribly violated; that by war, stealth, or surprise we CHRISTIANS may be furnished with our FELLOW-CREATURES, who are no longer considered as created in the image of God as well as ourselves, and equally entitled to liberty and freedom by the great law of nature; but they are to be deprived, forever deprived, of all the comforts of life, and to be made the most wretched of the human kind. I have seen it observed by a great writer that Christianity, by introducing into Europe the truest principles of humanity, universal benevolence, and brotherly love, had happily abolished civil slavery. Let us, who profess the same religion, practice its pre-

cepts, and, by agreeing to this duty, convince the world that we know and practice our truest interests and that we pay a proper regard to the dictates of justice and humanity."

When the Stamp Act was first passed he moved in the House of Burgesses for the address to his Majesty, the Memorial to the Lords, and the remonstrance to the House of Commons, served on the committee appointed to prepare them, and wrote the first and last paper.

## WESTMORELAND RESOLUTION.

In 1766, the next year after the Stamp Act was passed and ten years prior to the Declaration of Independence, Richard Henry Lee received a letter from his brother Thomas Ludwell Lee, which said among other things, "We propose to be in Leedstown in the afternoon of the 27th inst., (Feb. 1766,) where we expect to meet those who will come from your way."

This would be a fine opportunity to effect the scheme of an association, and I should be glad if you would think of a plan."

On the day specified our Patriotic Fathers rode into that ancient village and there formed an Association and solemnly bound themselves in an agreement and signed by one hundred and fifteen men.

The agreement was written by Richard Henry Lee and reads:

We who subscribe this paper, have associated and do bind ourselves to each other, to God and to our country, by the firmest ties that religion and virtue can frame, most sacredly and punctually to stand by

and, with our lives and fortunes, to support, maintain and defend each other in the observance and execution of "articles among which was this: As the Stamp Act does absolutely direct the property of the people to be taken from them without their consent, expressed by their representatives, and as in many cases it deprives the British-American subject of his rights to trial by jury, we do determine at every hazard, and paying no regard to danger or to death, we will exert every faculty to prevent the execution of the said Stamp Act in any instance whatsoever within this colony. And every abandoned wretch who shall be so lost to virtue and public good as wickedly to contribute to the introduction or fixture of the Stamp Act in this colony by using stamp paper, or by any other means, we will, with the utmost expedition, convince all such profligates that immediate danger and disgrace shall attend their prostitute purposes."

On August 1st, 1774, delegates from the several counties met at Williamsburg, discussed their grievances, declared their rights, and elected delegates to a general Congress, of all the Colonies to meet in Philadelphia, Pa., September 4th, 1774.

The following memorandum, in General Washington's writing, doubtless gives the result of the balloting in this Convention for these delegates. The original paper is in the possession of the Pennsylvania Historical Society: Peyton Randolph, 104; R. H. Lee, 100; Geo. Washington, 98; Pat. Henry, 89; Richard Bland, 79; Ben. Harrison, 66; Edmd. Pendleton, 62.

The first Constitutional Congress met in Carpen-

ter's Hall, on Chestnut Street, Philadelphia; its convening had been in many ways prepared for by correspondence between the leading patriots in the different colonies. Mr. Lee had been an early advocate of this correspondence; he wrote (under date of July 25th, 1768) to John Dickinson, of Pennsylvania, suggesting not only that select committees should be appointed for this purpose," but that private correspondence should be conducted between the lovers of liberty in every province." In 1775, the Virginia Assembly (Massachusetts took similar action about the same date) appointed "a Committee of Correspondence," of which Mr. Lee was a member. The first voice raised in this Congress was that of Patrick Henry, who, in a speech, it is said, of impassioned eloquence, unfolded to his anxious listeners the perils and the duties of the hour. The second speaker was Richard Henry Lee, who, supplementing and enlarging upon Henry's words, impressed the members with his wisdom and sagacity. Such evidently was the result of his eloquence, for he immediately took a leading place in that body, composed as it was of the ablest and wisest of all Americans. Joseph Read, a fellow member, wrote of the Virginians: "There are some fine fellows come from Virginia, but they are very high. The Bostonians are mere milksops to them. We understand they are the capital men of the Colony, both in fortune and understanding." Some one has said that the delegates from Virginia are "carefully selected, and represented in Richard Henry Lee and Patrick Henry, oratory and eloquence; in George Washington, the soldier; in Richard Bland, the finished writer; in Benjamin

Harrison, the wealthy and influential planter; in Edmund Pendleton, the man of law; in Peyton Randolph, solidity of character."

Mr. Lee was an active and energetic member of many of the leading committees of this Congress; from his pen emanated the memorial of the Congress to the people of British America, which has been generally considered a masterly document. Being a member of the next Congress, he wrote their address to the people of Great Britain, also a masterly state paper. As chairman of the committee, he drew up the instructions of Congress to General Washington upon his assuming command of the army. His most important and distinguished service was rendered on June 7th, 1776, when, in accordance with the instructions of the Virginia Convention,* and at the request of his colleagues, he proposed the resolutions for the independence of the Colonies; of which resolution a FAC SIMILE is given below.

Resolved [redacted] That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States, that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown, and that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved.

ORIGINAL PAPER IS PRESERVED IN THE ARCHIVES OF THE STATE DEPARTMENT AT WASHINGTON.

*See pp. 75.

This motion was seconded by John Adams, of Massachusetts; the discussion upon its adoption continued until the 10th of June, when a committee was appointed to prepare a declaration, in accordance with this motion. Mr. Lee's speech advocating his resolution has not been preserved but tradition states that it was an effort worthy of the occasion. His biographer has given these concluding sentences: "Why then, Sir, do we longer delay? Why still deliberate? Let this happy day give birth to an American Republic! Let her arise, not to devastate and conquer, but to re-establish the reign of peace and law. The eyes of Europe are fixed upon us. She demands of us a living example of freedom, that may exhibit a contrast, in the felicity of the citizen, to the ever-increasing tyranny which desolates her polluted shores. She invites us to prepare an asylum where the unhappy may find solace and the persecuted repose. She entreats us to cultivate a propitious soil, where that generous plant, which first sprung and grew in England, but is now withered by the poisonous blasts of Scottish tyranny, may revive and flourish, sheltering under its salubrious and interminable shade, all the unfortunate of the human race. If we are not this day wanting in our duty to our country, the names of the American legislators of '76 will be placed by posterity at the side of Theseus, of Lycurgus, of Romulus, of Numa, of the three Williams, of Nassau, and of all those whose memory has been, and forever will be, dear to virtuous men and good citizens."

It is the uniform rule of all deliberative bodies to appoint the member who has offered the resolution

the chairman of any committee selected to report upon that motion. In this case, therefore, Mr. Lee would have been chosen chairman of the committee for the drafting of the Declaration of Independence, had he been present. On the evening of the 10th of June, he received word of the serious illness of his wife; he left Philadelphia to visit her on the very day this committee was appointed. Thus an accidental sickness in his family probably deprived him of the signal honor of being the author as well as the mover of the Declaration of American Independence. It is said that the English papers, which gave the first intelligence of the adoption of the Declaration of Independence, headed their columns with this line:

"Richard Henry Lee and Patrick Henry have at last accomplished their object: The colonies have declared themselves independent of the mother country."

Mr. Lee's grandson stated that Governor Johnson, of Maryland, told him "that shortly after the war, he heard from an English gentleman of great respectability who lived in London during the Revolution, and who had opportunities of hearing a good deal of the plans and intentions of the ministry, that they had intended, in the event of the reduction of the colonies,, to have demanded the delivery of General Washington and Richard Henry Lee, and to have them executed as principle rebels."

Mr. Lee continued to serve in Congress for many years, being a member in 1778-80-84-87, and was one of the signers of the articles of confederation in 1778. During the sessions of 1784, he occupied the the chair as President, being, it is said, the unanim-

ous choice of all the delegates present. Some idea of his activity and of his almost incessant labors, may be gathered from the fact of his having served upon nearly one hundred committees during the sessions of 1776-77. Lee of Va. 176-177-178-181.

The following resolution was passed by the Virginia Assembly in 1777.

" '**Resolved,** That the thanks of this House be given by the Speaker, to Richard Henry Lee, Esq., for the faithful service he has rendered to his country, in discharge of his duty, as one of the delegates from this State in general Congress.' "

Mr. Lee opposed the adoption of the Constitution of 1787; in this opposition he was in agreement with George Mason, Patrick Henry, Benjamin Harrison, Thomas Jefferson, and others in Virginia, and many of the ablest patriots of the time in other States. But, after the ratification of the Constitution he consented to serve as one of the Senators from Virginia, mainly for the purpose of securing some amendments which he believed to be needed; many of these he was instrumental in securing. After many years of active service in Congress, and all the while a member of the Virginia Assembly, he finally, in 1792, retired from public life. Both branches of the Virginia Assembly gave him a vote of thanks for his patriotic services.

Richard Henry Lee, with his brothers, was a devoted personal, as well as political friend of George Washington; and, if one may judge by the tenor of the correspondence which passed between Washington and the Lees, this affection was cordially return-

ed by Washington. One of the last letters upon public affairs written by Mr. Lee was to Washington; in it he most cordially and heartily indorsed the administration of the President.

The Virginians seemd especially anxious that Mr. Lee should attend their convention, when it met to frame a constitution. Jefferson wrote (July 8th, 1776): "I shall return to Virginia after the 11th of August. I wish my successor may be certain to come before that time: in that case, I shall hope to see you, and not Wythe, in convention, that the business of the government, which is of everlasting concern, may receive your aid."

John Page of "Rosewell," wrote ".... I would to God you could be here at the next Convention.... If you could, make no doubt you might easily prevail on the Convention to declare for Independency and establish a form of government."

George Mason, of "Gunston," wrote: "..... I need not tell you how much you will be wanted here on this occasion. I speak with the sincerity of a friend when I assure you, that in my opinion, your presence cannot, must not be dispensed with. We cannot do without you."

Mr. Lee had been most urgent in the demand that no treaty should be made with England that did not allow to America the free navigation of the Mississippi and the right of fishing, etc., on the Banks of Newfoundland, etc. For this the New England States were very grateful to him, as is shown in this letter:

"Portsmouth, N. H., April 17th, 1783. My dear Sir:—I cannot omit an opportunity that offers by a

vessel bound to Virginia, to congratulate you on the happy event which, for many years, has been the great object of my labors and anxious cares. The very unequivocal part you, my dear friend, have taken, in this great resolution, must furnish your hours of retirement with the most pleasing reflections. Though the terms may not be, in all respects, exactly conformable to our wishes, they are, perhaps, equal to what we had a right to expect, all things being considered.

"My happiness is greatly increased by this joyous event, as it opens a prospect of seeing you here. I already anticipate the pleasure of recapitulating with you those private as well as public consultations, in which you took so eminent a part, and which have produced such happy effects. This country, my dear sir, is very particularly obliged for your exertions to secure the most valuable branch of her trade, the fisheries. As a small token of my sense of the obligation, I must beg your acceptance of a quintal of fish, which, I think, is of the best quality. With very particular attachment, and the greatest respect, I am, my dear sir, your most affectionate friend and humble servant.

(Signed) WM. WHIPPLE."

Both Samuel and John Adams expressed themselves frequently in a similar manner; indeed, such was the common tenor of the letters received by this patriot. No man of the period appears to have been held in greater esteem by those whose good opinion was at once a tribute to merit and an honor to be coveted. John Adams noted in his "diary" his impressions of the various men he met at different

times, and had this to say of his first meetings with Mr. Lee—and time seems rather to have increased than diminished his good opinion of the Lees.

Saturday, September 3rd, 1774. "Breakfasted at Dr. Shippen's; Dr. Witherspoon was there. Col. R. H. Lee lodges there; he is a masterly man. This Mr. Lee is a brother of the sheriff of London, and of Dr. Arthur Lee, and of Mrs. Shippen; they are all sensible and deep thinkers. Lee is for making the repeal of every revenue law—the Boston Port Bill, the bill for altering the Massachusetts Constitution, and the Quebec Bill and the removal of all troops—the end of the Congress, and an abstinence from all dutied articles, this means; rum, molasses, sugar, tea, wine, fruits, etc. He is absolutely certain that the same ship which carries home the resolution will bring back the redress. If we were to suppose that any time would intervene, he should be for exceptions. He thinks we should inform his Majesty that we never can be happy while the Lords Bute, Mansfield and North are his confidents and counsellors. He took his pen and attempted a calculation of the numbers of people represented by the Congress, which he made about two millions and two hundred thousand; and of revenue, now actually raised, which he made eighty thousand pounds sterling. He would not allow Lord North to have great abilities; he had seen no symptoms of them; his whole administration had been a blunder. He said the opposition had been feeble and incompetent before, that this was time to make vigorous exertions."

Mr. Grigsby, in his DISCOURSE ON THE VIRGINIA CONVENTION OF 1776, has said of him:

"Among the patriotic names distinguished in our early councils none is invested with a purer luster than the name of Lee. It is radiant with the glory of the Revolution. It has been illustrated by the sword, by the pen, and by the tongue. And in the Convention, now sitting, were two brothers* who bore the name, and who impressed upon it a dignity, which, prominent as it had been for more than a century of Colonial history, it had never borne before."

Henry Lee, the eldest son of General Henry Lee, is responsible for this story concerning Mr. Lee. "During the War of the Revolution, and, I believe, while Mr. Jefferson was Governor of Virginia, a British squadron which had been scouring the waters and wasting the shores of the Chesapeake, taking advantage of a favorable breeze, suddenly came-to off the coast of Virginia, where the majestic cliffs of Westmoreland overlook the stormy and sea-like Potomac. Mr. Lee was at that time on one of those visits to his family, with which, from the permanent sitting of Congress, the members were of necessity occasionally accommodated. He hastily collected from the nearest circle of his neighbors a small and ill-armed band, repaired at their head to the point on which the enemy had commenced a descent, and without regard to his inferiority of means and numbers, instantly attacked them. He drove the party on shore back into their barges, and held them aloof until ships were brought to cover the landing with round shot and shells, which he had no means of returning. Then as he was the first in advance so

*Richard Henry Lee, Francis Lightfoot Lee.

he was the last to retire; as the men who were with him have, since his death, often said. Several of the hostile party were killed or wounded, among them an officer, whom they carired off. One man they buried on the shore. In a grove of aged beech trees, not far from Mr. Lee's residence, rest the remains of this unknown and unforgotten foe."

At the present time there is shown at Stratford one of these round shot, which tradition says was fired at the house by an English warship; how much of the truth there is in this tradition cannot be ascertained.

Bishop Meade has left his estimate of Mr. Lee's character and public services in these words:

"In looking over the two volumes containing the life and correspondence of Richard Henry Lee, of Chantilly, in Westmoreland, the reader cannot fail to ask himself the question, 'Was there a man in the Union who did more in his own county and State and country, by action at home and correspondence abroad, to prepare the people of the United States for the opposition to English usurpation, and the assertion of American independence? Was there a man in America who toiled and endured more than he, both in body and in mind, in the American cause? Was there a man in the Legislature of Virginia, and in the Congress of the Union, who had the pen of a ready writer so continually in his hand, and to which so many public papers may be justly ascribed, and by whom so much hard work in committee-rooms was performed?' To him must be assigned the honourable but perilous duty of first moving in our American Congress, 'That these United Colonies are,

and of right ought to be, free and independent States.' Nor is it at all wonderful that one who was conversant with the plans and intentions of the English ministry should have declared that, in the event of the reduction of the Colonies, the delivery of General Washington and Richard Henry Lee would be demanded, in order for their execution as rebels. Although the great principles of religion and morality rest on infinitely higher ground than the opinion of the greatest and best of men, yet it is most gratifying to find them sustained in the writings and actions of such men as Richard Henry Lee.

His biographer says that he had early studied the evidences of the Christian religion, and had through life avowed his belief in its divine origin. He was a member of the Episcopal Church in full communion, and took a deep interest in its welfare. His attachment to the church of his father was evinced by the interest he took in seeking to obtain consecration for our Bishops, immediately after the war, and when he was President of Congress, Twice were thanks returned to him by our General Convention for his services. Mr. Lee was a decided advocate of the appointment of public acts of supplication and thanksgiving to Almighty God in times of adversity and prosperity. When all was dark and lowering in our political horizon, and when it was proposed that, as one means of propitiating the favor of God, it should be recommended to the different States to take the most effectual means for encouraging religion and good morals, and for suppressing 'theatrical entertainments, horse-racing, gaming, and such other diversions as are productive of idleness, dissi-

pation, and a general depravity of manners,' while some voted against the measure, Mr. Lee was found in company with the most pious men of the land in favor of it, and it was carried by a large majority. Again, when by the capture of Burgoyne's army the hearts of Americans were cheered, we find Mr. Lee one of a committee drafting a preamble and resolutions, which is believed to be from his own pen, in the following pious strain:

" 'Forasmuch as it is the indispensable duty of all men to adore the superintending providence of Almighty God, to acknowledge with gratitude their obligations to Him for the benefits received, and to implore such further blessings as they stand in need of; and it having pleased Him in His abundant mercy, not only to continue to us the innumerable bounties of His Common providence, but also to smile upon us in the prosecution of a just and necessary war for the independence and establishment of our inalienable rights and liberties; particularly in that He hath been pleased in so great a measure to prosper the means used for the support of our arms, and crown them with the most signal success; it is therefore recommended to the Legislature and the executive powers of these States, to set apart Thursday the eighteenth day of December next, for solemn thanksgiving and praise; that with one heart and one voice the people may express the feelings of their hearts, and consecrate themselves to the service of their Divine Benefactor; and, together with their sincere thanks, acknowledgements and offerings, they may join the penitent confession of their manifold sins, whereby they have forfeited every

favour, and their earnest and humble supplication that it may please God, through the merits of Jesus Christ, mercifully to forgive and blot them out of remembrance; that it may please God, graciously to shower his blessings on the Government of these states respectively and to prosper the public council of the whole United States; to inspire our Commanders, both by land an sea, and all under them, with that wisdom and fortitude which may render them fit instruments under the providence of Almighty God to secure for these United States the great test of all blessings, Independance and Peace, that it may please him to prosper the trade and manufactures of the people and the labor of the husbandmen that our land may yield its increase to protect schools and seminaries of learning so necessary for cultivating the principles of true liberty, virtue, and piety under his nurturing hand, and to prosper the means of religion for the promotion and enlargement of the kingdom which consists of righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Ghost.

"It is further recommended that all servile labor and such recreation as at other times innocent, may be unbecoming the purpose of this appointment on so solemn an occasion.' "

This historic document was adopted by Congress October 30th, 1777 and sent to the Governors of the respective states on the 1st of November.

The question about paying debts in depreciated currency came on, Mr. Lee evinced his high and honorable sense of morality in the earnest and eloquent opposition made to it. He declared that nothing so deeply distressed him as a proposition which he re-

garded as a violation of honesty and good faith among men, and said that it "would have been better to have remained the honest slaves of Britain, than dishonest freemen."

Of Richard Henry Lee's personal appearance and of his style of oratory one or two descriptions by contemporaries may be given William Wirt wrote: "His face was on the Roman model; his nose Caesarean; the port and carriage of his head, leaning persuasively and gracefully forward; and the whole contour, noble and fine. He has studied the classics in the true spirit of criticism. His taste had that delicate touch which seized with intuitive certainty every beauty of an author, and his genius that native affinity which combined them without an effort. Into every walk of literature and science he had carried this mind of exquisite selection, and brought it back to the business of life, crowned with every light of learning and decked with every wreath that all the muses and all the graces could entwine. Nor did these light decorations constitute the whole value of its freight. He possesed a rich store of historical and political knowledge, with an activity of observation and a certainty of judgment which turned that knowledge to the very best account. He was not a lawyer by profession, but he understood thoroughly the Constitution, both of the mother country and of her colonies; and the elements also of the civil and municipal law. Thus, while his eloquence was free from those stiff and technical restraints which the habits of forensic speaking are apt to generate, he had all the legal learning which was necessary to a statesman. He reasoned well and declaimed freely

and splendidly. The note of his voice was deep and melodious. It was the canorous voice of Cicero. He had lost the use of one of his hands which he kept constantly covered with a black silk bandage, neatly fitted to the palm of his hand, but leaving his thumb free; yet, notwithstanding this disadvantage, his gesture was so graceful and highly finished that it is said he had acquired it by practising before a mirror. Such was his promptitude that he required no preparation for debate. He was ready for any subject as soon as it was announced; and his speech was so copious, so rich, so mellifluous, set off with such bewitching cadence of voice and such captivating grace of action that, while you listened to him, you desired to hear nothing superior, and indeed thought him perfect. He had a quick sensibility and a fervid imagination."

Dr. Rush said of him: "I never knew so great an orator whose speeches were so short. Indeed, I might almost say that he could not speak long. He had conceived his subject so clearly, and presented it so immediately to his hearers, that there appeared nothing more to be said about it. He did not use figures to ornament discourse, but made them the vehicles of argument."

John Adams wrote, February 24th, 1821, to a grandson of R. H. Lee: "With your grandfather, Richard Henry Lee, I served in Congress from 1774 to 1778, and afterward in the Senate of the United States in 1789. He was a gentleman of fine talents, of amiable manners and great worth. As a public speaker, he had a fluency as easy and graceful as melodious, which his classical education enabled him

to decorate with frequent allusion to the finest passages of antiquity. With all his brothers, he was always devoted to the cause of his country."

Mr. Lee's will, dated June 18th, 1793, was probated in Westmoreland County, June 24th, 1794.

Mr. Lee died two years after retiring from public life; his constitution had been enfeebled by his long and arduous labors. He was troubled much with gout, which attacked the abdominal viscera, and caused him great suffering, but, though his body had become feeble, his mind retained its vigor. He breathed his last at Chantilly, June 19th, 1794, and was buried in the old family burial place, at the "Burnt House Fields," Mt. Pleasant, as he desired in his will.

Of the home of Richard Henry Lee, little is known. Thomas Lee Shippen, when describing his visit to Westmoreland, wrote his father that Chantilly "commands a much finer view than Stratford by reason of a large bay into which the Potomac forms itself opposite Chantilly.....The house is rather commodious than elegant. The sitting-room which is very well ornamented, is 18x30 feet, and the dining-room 20x24." From the inventory and appraisement of the furniture, etc., at Chantilly, it is learned that there was a dining-room, library, parlor, and chamber on the first floor. The hall being, as was usual, furnished as a sitting-room, contained a mahogany desk, twelve arm chairs, a round and a square table, a covered walnut table, two boxes of tools, and a trumpet. On the second floor there were four large chambers and a small one at the head of the stairs: two rooms on the third floor; store rooms and closets.

The outbuildings mentioned were, kitchen, dairy, blacksmith shop, stable, and barn. The enumeration of the books in the library showed about 500 separate works, on science, history, politics, medicine, farming, etc., etc., which were appraised at 229 pounds, 10 shillings and 7 pence. Of money in the house at the time of his death, there were $54 in silver, valued at 16 pounds 4 shillings; in bank of Alexandria, 181 pounds, 19 shillings, 7 pence; "Tobacco notes" for 13,907 pounds, nett.

Richard Henry Lee was twice married; first, on December 3rd, 1757, to Anne Aylett, who was probably a daughter, or granddaughter, of William and Anne Aylett, of King William County; she died December 12th, 1768, leaving four young children, and was buried, as was stated in her husband's will, at Mt. Pleasant. But a monument was placed in the old church at Nominy, to her memory—another instance of a person, buried in the old family burying-ground, while a tablet to her memory was placed in a church some miles off. The old Nominy church stood upon a slight hill overlooking Nominy Creek, and was about five miles from Mt. Pleasant, and about the same distance from Stratford, being situated between the two estates. The old church was burned many years ago; This copy of the inscription on the tablet is from a manuscript in his writing:

"Description of my dear Mrs. Lee's monument in Nominy Church."

Sacred to the memory of Mrs. Anne Lee, wife of Col. Richard Lee. This monument was erected by her afflicted husband, in the year 1769.

Reflect, dear reader, on the great uncertainty of human life, since neither esteemed temperament nor the most amiable goodnes could save this excellent Lady from death in the bloom of Life. She left behind here four children, two sons and two daughters. Obiit 12th December, 1768, aet. 30.

"Was then so precious a flower
  But given us to behold it waste,
The short lived blossom of an hour,
  To nice, too fair, too sweet to last."

Richard Henry and Anne (Aylett) Lee (his first wife) had four children.

I—Thomas, 5 see page 140.

II—Ludwell, 5 see page 141.

III—Mary, 5 born July 28, 1764, married Col. William Augustine Washington, and died early in life, leaving no issue.

IV—Hannah, 5 born in 1766, married Corbin Washington, of Walnut Farm, Westmoreland County, and died about 1801. Had six children.

Richard Henry married again about June 1769, Mrs. Anne (Gaskins) Pinckhard. Richard Henry and Anne (Pinckhard) Lee (his second wife) had two sons and three daughters.

V—Anne 5, born Dec. 1, 1770, married her cousin, Charles Lee, died Sept. 9, 1804.

VI—Henrietta 5, born Dec. 10, 1773, twice married, first, to Richard Lee Turberville, second, the Rev. William Maffit, died 1803-4.

VII—Sarah 5, born Nov. 27, 1775, married her

cousin, Edmund Jennings Lee and died at Alexandria, May 18, 1837.

VIII—Cassius 5, born at Chantilly, Aug. 18, 1779.

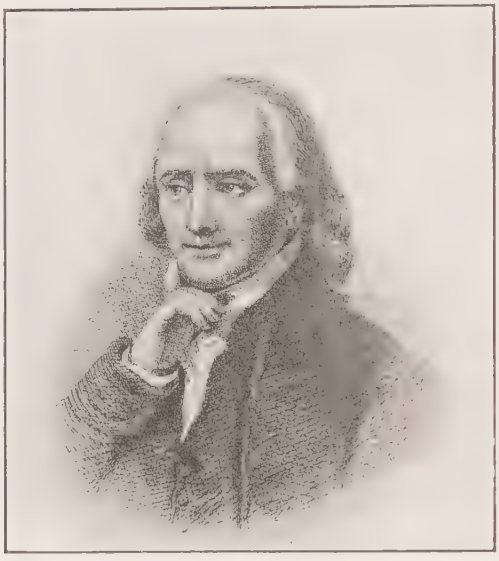
"May every Caesar feel
The deep keen searching of a Patriot's steel."

"Dyed at Princeton, N. J., July 8th, 1798, in the 19th year of his age Cassius Lee (son of R. H. Lee, Esqr.) a student of Nassau College, New Jersey. Let not the voice of sorrow be repressed, let it teach those who knew him not, to appreciate the loss the community has sustained in the death of this amiable young man. He was endowed with feelings the most ardent and philanthropic, united to a superior intellect, assiduously cultivated, combined with sentiments of Liberality and Benevolence. But, alas! the hopes formed of such a youth were never to be realized, he was received by the grave, almost at the time he was to leave the place of his education, and bestow his talents on his Country. From the short period of his life, his acquaintance was confined to a few, but while one of that few remains, he will be respected, beloved and lamented.

" 'Some messenger of God From Earth returning
Saw this beauteous flower, transported gathered it
And in his hand bore it to Heaven rejoicing.' "

(Signed) Cornelia Lee.

IX—Francis Lightfoot 5, see page 145.



**Francis Lightfoot Lee.**

Francis Lightfoot Lee 4, eighth child of Thomas 3 (Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Stratford, Oct. 14, 1734, and died at his home, "Menokin," Richmond County, Jan., 1797. He was educated at home by a private tutor, the Rev. Mr. Craig, who not only made him a good scholar but imbued him with a genuine fondness for the study of the classics, and for literature in general. Mr. Lee, on arriving at manhood, first settled in Loudoun County, the lands left him by his father being in that county; he and his brother, Philip Ludwell, are mentioned as among the founders of the town of Leesburg; as early as 1765, he appeared in public life, being chosen a Burgess from that county. A few years later, on his

marriage, he moved from Loudoun to Richmond County and built himself a home which he called Menokin, from the Indian name Manakin. Being chosen a Burgess from Richmond County, he was acting in that position when the first rumbling of the coming storm were heard, and seems to have promptly taken his stand by the side of his brothers as an earnest patriot. When in August, 1775, Col. Bland resigned his position as a representative in the Continental Congress, George Mason himself refusing the position, recommended Francis Lightfoot Lee, and he was chosen. It is not recorded that he held any position as a speaker; his usefulness, therefore lay in the quieter and less ostentatious forms of public service, and it may be safely assumed that he was useful, for he was successively re-elected in 1776-77-78. In the spring of 1779 he retired from Congress, being averse to public life and hoping to be allowed to live henceforth a quiet country life. But not so; he was soon called again to the front, this time to serve in the Senate chamber of the Virginia Assembly.

Mr. Lee's chief public services while in Congress were to assist in framing the articles of the old confederation, and later in his vigorous demand that no treaty of peace should be made with Great Britain which did not guarantee to the Americans the freedom of the Northern fisheries and the free navigation of the Mississippi River. Subsequent events have amply proven the wisdom of his foresight in making this demand. Mr. Lee was also with his brother, Richard Henry, a signer of the Declaration of Independence.

An anecdote is told of Francis Lightfoot Lee which will illustrate his admiration for Washington. Being one day at the county court house, just after the new federal Constitution had been adopted at Philadelphia, and was, of course, the subject of general interest, some one asked his opinion of it. He replied that he did not pretend to be a good judge of such important matters, but that one circumstance satisfied him in its favor, this was that "General Washington was in favor of it and John Warden was against it." Warden was a Scotch lawyer of the county who had just been making a speech against the ratification of the new Constitution.

A writer on the Signers of the Declaration of Independence has said of him; "In the spring of 1779, Mr. Lee retired from Congress, and returned to the home to which both his temper and inclination led him, with delight. He was not, however, long permitted to enjoy the satisfaction it conferred, for the internal affairs of his native State were in a situation of so much agitation and perplexity that his fellow-citizens insisted on his representing them in the Senate of Virginia. He carried into that body all the integrity, sound judgment, and love of country for which he had ever been conspicuous, and his labors there were alike honorable to himself and useful to the State.

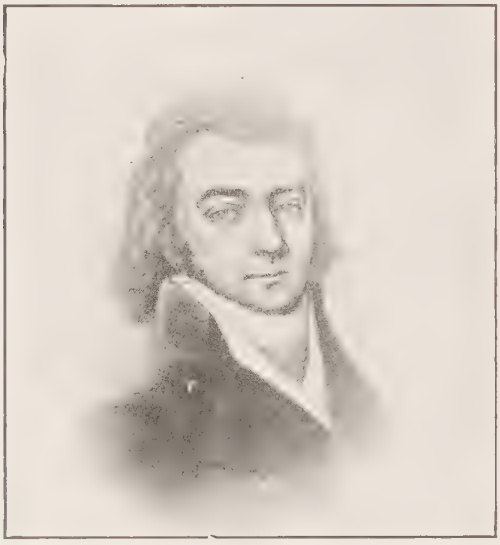
"He did not long remain in this situation. His love of ease, and fondness for domestic occupations now gained the entire ascendency over him, and he retired from public life with the firm determination of never again engaging in its busy and wearisome scenes; and to this determination he strictly adher-

ed. In this retirement his character was most conspicuous. He always possesed more of the gay, good humor and pleasing wit of Atticus than the sternness of Cato, or the eloquence of Cicero. To the young, the old, the grave, the gay, he was alike a pleasing and interesting companion. None approached him with diffidence; no one left him but with regret. To the poor around he was a counsellor, physician, and friend; to others, his conversation was at once agreeable and instructive, and his life a fine example for imitation. Like the great founder of our Republic, he was much attached to agriculture, and retained from his estate a small farm for experiment and amusement.

"Having no children, Mr. Lee lived an easy and quiet life. Reading, farming, and the company of his friends and relatives filled up the remaining portion of his days.

Mr. Lee married April 21st, 1769, Rebecca, second daughter of Col. John and Rebecca (Plater) Tayloe, of "Mt. Airy," Richmond County. Both he and his wife died within a few days of each other and without issue, in the winter of 1797, having taken cold from exposure to the severe weather then prevailing.

His will was dated December 30th, 1795, and probated in Richmond County February 6th, 1797. It was written by himself.



**William Lee.**

William 4, tenth child of Thomas 3, (Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Stratford, Aug. 31, 1739, died at Greenspring, June 27, 1795. While residing in London he married his cousin Hannah Philippa, daughter of Philip Ludwell, of Greenspring, Va.

The Greenspring mansion, once famous in the early history of Virginia, was built by Sir William Berkeley; probably just previous to his marriage with the beautiful widow, Mrs. Stephens. Greenspring was situated about five miles from Jamestown, and about two miles from James River. During Berkeley's life Greenspring was practically the seat of the government, and his party were known as the "Greenspring

faction." After his death his widow married Philip Ludwell, a widower, who lived near by, and again the mansion became the centre of political manoeuvering. Mrs. Ludwell always called herself "Lady Berkeley;" she left this estate to her husband and he, in turn, to his son. So it descended until it came into the possession of the two daughters of the third Philip Ludwell; one of whom married William Lee, as stated.

Of the early life and education of William Lee nothing is known; presumably he was educated at home, as was his brother, Francis Lightfoot Lee. He first appeared on record as one of the signers, in February, 1766, of the famous resolutions of the patriots of the Northern Neck.* Very shortly after this, he must have gone to settle in London as a Virginian Merchant. His brother Arthur accompanied him to study law at the Temple. The two brothers appear soon to have become interested in the political questions of the hour, which were of the most exciting nature; to the general questions of political character, there were added those of a local nature, and the two combined kept the London merchants greatly excited. For an American, the mercantile business appears to have been simply the selling of tobacco and buying manufactured goods to send out in return for the tobacco; in the royal exchange there was "the Virginia Walk," where merchants interested in Colonial trading, chiefly conducted their business. William Lee seems to have divided his time between mercantile and political pursuits; for he had not been long in London before he was en-

*See pp. 81.

gaged very actively in its local politics. His numerous letters home, were about equally divided between politics and business, and it is probable that these letters kept Americans well informed as to the trend of opinion in England. From the earliest date, he warned them that they could not expect any redress from the British ministry; that their only alternatives were surrender or war.

"In May, 1775, the alderman of Aldgate ward, John Shakespeare, died, and a ward-mote was held at Iron-monger's Hall to elect a successor.

....Mr. Lee was elected, and made a 'spirited speech' to the electors, summarized by the London Chronicle as follows:—'He assured them that though he was elected for life, he should always think himself accountable to them for the discharge of the trust reposed in him. That as a public magistrate, he should attend the dispensation of justice with care and assiduity; and as their particular magistrate, he should endeavor to promote and maintain harmony, peace, and good order in the ward. He said that as to his public principles, he held the free constitution of this country sacred and inestimable, which, as the source and security of all our happiness, it was the duty of every honest man to defend from violation; that therefore it should ever be his care, by every exertion and at every hazard, to resist the arbitrary encroachments of the Crown and its Ministers, upon the rights of the citizens, and the liberties of the people.'

"'As an American, he declared it was his wish that the union between Great Britain and the Colonies might be re-established, and remain forever.

but that constitutional liberty must be the sacred bond of that union. He considered the attempts of the present administration against American liberty, as a plain prelude to the invasion of freedom in this country; but he trusted that the virtue of the Americans, aided by the friends of freedom here, would teach the tories of this day, as their ancestors had been happily taught, how vain a thing it is to attempt wresting their liberties from a people determinded to defend them.'

"Mr Lee was sworn in on the 14th of June, and after the meeting was over 'went in the state coach with the Lord Mayor to the Mansion House, where he was elegantly entertained by his Lordship, with a number of other guests.' " (From the LETTERS OF WILLIAM LEE, edited by W. C. Ford, 1891, 26-7.)

Thus, the beginning of the Revolution found Mr. Lee holding the office of sheriff in London, yet bound by all ties of kindred and by his business interests to the cause of the Colonies. "His connections and opinions were well known in the city and to the government, and he, with his brother Arthur, were soon objects of suspicion to the ministry. It was not surprising, therefore, to find in the English Records Office some letters from William to his brothers in Virginia that the administration had intercepted; and the contents of these missives fully justified the suspicion of the ministry of his disloyalty, and arouse in us a feeling of surprise that the writer was not seized or his usefulness as an agent of America suppressed."

In 1775, Alderman Lee accompanied the Lord

Mayor and other city dignitaries to St. James to present to the King "an humble address and petition," praying for the suspension of all "operation of force," etc. April 21st, 1777, Mr. Lee received notice of his appointment as commercial agent for the Continental Congress in France, subsequently, in September 1777, he was appointed to represent the Colonies at the Courts of Berlin and Vienna; to the latter city he went on a fruitless errand; his brother Arthur going in his place to Berlin, was, likewise, unable to gain any substantial results from that Court. Later on, William Lee accepted the position of representative to The Hague where he was able to conclude a treaty with the Dutch, which exerted some moral influence, though not of practical value. It is claimed that Mr. Lee was one of the earliest originators of the move which finally secured the treaty of "armed neutrality," which was to protect the freedom of commerce against the exactions of England. This treaty was of considerable value to America, as it enabled them to secure supplies from friendly nations in Europe, and if Mr. Lee was instrumental in gaining this treaty he rendered his country a valuable service.

He returned to America in 1784 and resided on his estate at Greenspring. The last years of his life were saddened by poor health and almost total blindness.

The following are extracts from one of his letters written December 10th, 1780, from Brussells:

"The British ministry have certainly promised Gen. Clinton to send him in the spring a re-enforcement of ten thousand men, including the recruits for

the German Corps now in America. Perhaps some may flatter you that the enemy will not be able to procure such a number to send; but I request you not to deceive yourselves, and be inattentive to your true interests, by relying on such rumors, or the foreign aid that may be promised you from Europe; no people can be in safety that rely on another for protection. France is indeed very powerful, both by sea and land, and will, no doubt, act vigorously against the common enemy; but so many accidents and untoward circumstances have intervened to render abortive all the attempts they have hitherto made to assist us, that, in common sense and prudence, you ought not to trust to aid what must come from Europe. If it does come, so much the better, as you may then finish the war at once; but place your confidence in yourselves alone, and then you cannot be essentially hurt.

"The Dutch have at last formally acceded, and so has the King of Prussia, to the treaty of armed neutrality, as proposed last spring by the Empress of Russia, and since entered into by Sweden and Denmark. The object of this great and powerful league is to support the freedom of general commerce and navigation against the unwarrantable pretensions of Great Britain; therefore she must now quietly permit France and Spain to be supplied with naval stores for the support of their navy, or enter into war with this tremendous confederacy. It is, however, impossible for her to resist, which must finally give the superiority to France and Spain. I feel no little pleasure in communicating to you the completion, so far, of this confederacy, as the first traces were laid by myself two years ago; and if Congress

had now in Europe ministers properly authorized to negotiate with those powers, it would not be difficult to obtain a general acknowledgement from them of the independence of America, which was my ultimate object in forming the outlines of this scheme.

"The public news in England you will see in all the papers that go by this conveyance; so that I have only to recommend to you, in the most pressing manner, a vigorous exertion, unanimity, and confidence in yourselves, which may, in all probability, end the war this year in your favor."

William Lee's will was dated February 24th, 1789; two codicils were added at later dates; it was probated at Richmond, on June 11th, 1796.

William and Hannah Philippa (Ludwell) Lee had four children, two sons and two daughters.

I—William Ludwell 5, born at London, January 23rd, 1775; died at "Greenspring" January 24th, 1803. He was buried in the old Jamestown Churchyard, near his father. In his will he asked that he be buried there, saying: "I desire that my body be committed to the earth near the grave of my dear respected father in the church yard at Jamestown. The spot where I wish to be interred is designated by two pegs of Sycamore on the south side of the grave of my late father." He also desired that the lot be inclosed with a substantial brick wall five feet high and an iron gate. He bequeathed all his library, excepting the family Bible, to Bishop Madison; set all his slaves free and provided for them; gave five hundred bushels of corn per annum to William and Mary College; remainder of estate to his two sisters.

2. Portia 5, born in 1777; died February, 19th, 1840; married William Hodgson, formerly of White Haven, England, who died at Alexandria, November 7, 1820. They had eight children.

3. Brutus 5, born in November, 1778; died in June, 1779.

4. Cornelia 5, was born at Brussels March 3rd, 1780; died in 1815; married October 16, 1806, John Hopkins, Esq., of Richmond.

**Arthur Lee.**

Arthur Lee 4, eleventh child of Thomas 3, (Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Stratford, Dec. 21, 1740; died at his home, "Lansdown," Middlesex County, Dec. 12, 1792.

After a course of private tuition Arthur was sent to Eton, from thence to Edinburgh, where he studied "general science and polite literature," and, later, medicine. He obtained a diploma, approving him as a general scholar and conferring the degree of M. D. He was always fond of botanical studies, a subject frequently mentioned in his letters; for his thesis, upon graduation, he wrote on "Peruvian Bark," and obtained the prize given each year for the best thesis on a botanical topic. His essay was so much approved that it was "decreed" to be published under the direction and authority of the university.

Before returning to Virginia Dr. Lee traveled through Holland and parts of Germany. Soon after his return he commenced the practice of medicine at Williamsburg, at that time the chief town of the State. Like many others, who find the study of medicine agreeable enough, but its practice very unsatisfactory, he soon gave it up and turned his attention to law and politics, pursuits that suited his restless, energetic disposition much better than medicine. Early in 1767 he returned to England in company with his brother William, the one to study law, the other to enter a mercantile life. Both soon interested themselves in the political question of the hour. These were in an agitated condition; many in England were dissatisfied with the ministry in both its domestic and colonial policies. It was the endeavor of the Lees to unite this element of opposition in favor of the Colonies by a shrewd combination of colonial with domestic affairs. Mr. Lee was admitted to the bar in April 1775, and began the practice of law in London. In 1776 he left London for Paris

and other Continental cities to act as commissioner for the American Colonies. Previous to his departure he had been acting as agent in London for the Colonies of Massachusetts and Virginia. He had also been instrumental, by means of a vast correspondence, in bringing the American cause to the attention of many in England and on the Continent. By his letters to friends in America, he had been keeping them in touch with the trend of political events in England. Thus, on the one hand, he aroused public sympathy in Europe; on the other, he warned the Americans of their danger. It is not doubtful that he was able by this correspondence, to effect much for the cause of the Colonies. Few writers of that period wielded a more vigorous pen than Arthur Lee.

In the spring of 1775, the Mayor, Alderman, and the Livery of London desired to present a petition to the King as a remonstrance against the measures of his ministry in their colonial policy; at their request, Dr. Lee wrote this remonstrance. A copy of it was also sent to the American Congress, who ordered a suitable reply to be made. Richard Henry Lee, as chairman of the committee, drafted this reply. Neither of the brothers was aware of the part the other had acted in this matter until they met years after its occurrence. Besides the correspondence, already alluded to, Dr. Lee published his "Monitor's Letters," addressed to the people of the Colonies, and an "Appeal to the English Nation," which was greatly admired and for some time attributed to Lord Chatham. Under the signature of "Junius Americanus," he published a series of letters. They were so bright, so able, that Junius wrote to Wilkes:

"My American namesake is plainly a man of abilities.....You may assure Dr. Lee that to MY heart and understanding the names of American and Englishman are synonymous; and that as to any future taxation upon America, I look upon it as near to impossible as the highest improbability can go.

"I HOPE, THAT SINCE HE HAD OPPOSED ME, WHERE HE THINKS ME WRONG, HE WILL BE EQUALLY READY TO ASSIST ME, WHERE HE THINKS ME RIGHT."

Before his death, Dr. Lee had commenced a memoir of the Revolution, but did not live to complete it. Much of the part he did write has been lost, a fragment only being preserved. Some extracts from this will give a better idea of him and of his work than anything from the pen of another. "It is to aid in placing the history of the American Revolution in its true light, that the following memoirs are written. The author of them was concerned in its events from its commencement to its conclusion. He was employed generally in the highest stations, and in the most secret and confidential transactions. He always preserved the original papers and letters, on which he founded the journal from which the following memoirs are extracted. He is therefore sure of their authenticity, as well of his determination, NE QUID FALIS DICERE; NE QUID ACRE NARRARE.

"The writer of these memoirs was in London when the repeal of the stamp-act was agitated in both houses of parliament. He heard Mr. Pitt and Lord

Camden deliver their celebrated speeches on this question, which would have immortalized them as orators and statesmen. Though the obnoxious act was repealed, yet he was persuaded that the spirit which dictated it and was still resting near the throne was not changed. With this impression he turned to Virginia.

"It was not long before my impressions were realized, by the passage of an act of the British Parliament for imposing duties on tea, paper, glass, etc., exported to the colonies. This was changing the mode but preserving the principle of the stamp-act. This was soon and ably pointed out in some periodical letters, under the signature of a 'Pennsylvania Farmer.' These letters were written in a popular style, were universally read and as universally admired.

"I endeavored to aid their operation in alarming and informing my countrymen by a series of letters under the signature of 'Monitor.' In the course of a few months it was manifest that the people of this continent were not, disposed to be finessed out of their liberties, and as I knew the British cabinet was determined to enforce rather than abandon the usurpation, I was persuaded that a very serious contest was approaching. To prepare for that was the next object in my mind. The most effectual way to accomplish this, it seemed to me, was to form a correspondence with the leading patriotic men in each colony. I wrote myself to London, where the acquaintance I had would enable me to obtain speedy and accurate information of the real designs of the British ministry, which being communicated to lead-

ing men in the several Colonies, might enable them to harmonize in one system of opposition, since on this harmony the success of their opposition would depend. In pursuance of this plan I went to Maryland, to Philadelphia, and New York. The men I had in contemplation were Mr. Daniel Dulany, who had written some able pieces, styled 'Considerations on the Stamp-Act:' Mr. John Dickinson, who was the author of the celebrated 'Farmer's Letters,' and the leader of the Livingston party in New York, who is at present the Governor of New Jersey.

"I found Mr. Dulany so cold and distant that it seemed in vain to attempt anything with him. Mr. Dickinson received me with friendship, and the contemplated correspondence took place. Mr. Livingston, of New York, was absent from the city in the country, lamenting the death of a child, so that I did not see him. The time I was to sail for England now approached; I could not therefore proceed further eastward. Embarking with one of my brothers, we arrived safely in London.

"The proceedings against Mr. Wilkes at this time agitated the nation. Mr. Wilkes was the idol of the people and the abhorrence of the king. All the power of prerogative, all the influence of the crown, and every practicable perversion of law, were employed to subdue him. Of courage, calm and intrepid, of a flowing wit, accommodating in his temper, of manner convivial and conversible, an elegant scholar, and well read in constitutional law, he stood the Atlas of popular opposition. Such was the man against whom the whole powers of the crown were mustering their rage; and whom, to use the words of Juni-

us, 'the rays of royal indignation collected upon him served only to illuminate, but could not consume.' Mr. Wilkes was then confined in the King's Bench, as the printer and publisher of the 'Essay on Woman.' The city of London was the stronghold of popular opposition, and the Society of the Bill of Rights the most active in conducting it. This society consisted of real or pretended personal friends of Mr. Wilkes; but some insinuated themselves with very different views.

"Having taken this view of the political condition of England, I formed the plan of connecting myself with the opposition; and the grievances of America with those of England. For this purpose I became a member of the Bill of Rights, and purchased the freedom and livery of the city of London. By these means I acquired a voice and influence in all the measures of that society, and in the proceedings and elections of the city. An acquaintance with Mr. Wilkes soon grew into intimacy and confidence. The arbitrary views of the crown originated in the same spirit on both sides of the Atlantic. To sensible men, therefore, the combining of the complaints of the people of America and England appeared just and politic. I procured the introduction of the grievances of America into the famous Middlesex Petition; and to keep them alive in the popular mind I commenced and continued a periodical paper, under the signature of Junius Americanus. My brother established himself in London, was elected an alderman and one of the sheriffs. Our footing was now strong, and the American cause was firmly united with that of England. During these transactions

I studied law in Lincoln's Inn and the Middle Temple, and being called to the bar, practiced in the King's bench and on the home circuit. This situation increased my opportunities of serving my country....

"Of the disposition and intention of the administration I kept my correspondents in America constantly informed, with this constant opinion, that they must prepare to maintain their liberties at all hazards. My conduct in England had reached America in so favorable a light that the house of Representatives in Massachusetts elected me their agent, in case of the absence or death of Dr. Franklin. At that time I was not personally known to any member of the house....

"My political progress had made me acquainted with many of the leaders of all parts of the opposition, such as Lord Shelburne, Mr. Beckford, Lord Temple, Mr. Dunning, Sergeant Glynn, Col. Barre, Mr. Wilkes, the Alderman Sawbridge, Townsend, and Oliver. It was by constantly comparing the different ideas of those gentlemen with one another, and with the plans and proceedings of the ministers, that I was able to form a pretty accurate judgment, both of the real intentions of the latter and how far America was warranted in relying on the support of the former. These were the two principle objects of my pursuit. The dearest rights and interests of my immediate country were at hazard. It would not have been wise to have trusted these to the mere issues of political intrigues and party opposition for place and preferment. Some, however, of the above leaders appeared to me hearty in the cause of America, as well as of England. Their advocation of lib-

erty was general. Among these the most illustrious was the Earl of Shelburne. Him had I long known, long studied, and found his conduct uniform and unimpeachable. But the private life of this nobleman was no less the subject of my esteem and admiration."

In November of 1775 Congress appointed a committee to secretly correspond with the friends of America in Great Britain "and other parts of the world." The Committee chose Dr. Lee their secret agent in London; this letter from them was copied from the original MSS.

"Philadelphia, December 12th, 1775. Sir: By this conveyance we have the pleasure of transmitting to you sundry printed papers, that such of them as you think proper may be immediately published in England.....It would be agreeable to Congress to know the disposition of foreign powers towards us, and we hope this object will engage your attention. We need not hint that great circumspection and impenetrable secrecy are necessary. The Congress rely on your zeal and ability to serve them, and will readily compensate you for whatever trouble and expense a compliance with their desire may occasion. We remit you for the present 200 pounds. Whenever you think the importance of your dispatches may require it, we desire you to send an express boat with them from England, for which service your agreement with the owner there shall be fulfilled by us here."

In the winter of 1776, Dr. Lee went to Paris, in pursuance of this commission; and at various times

thereafter he visited other capitals on the same errand—seeking supplies and making friends for the Colonies. He wrote his brother, R. H. Lee, in 1777: "I have within this year been at the several courts of Spain, Vienna, and Berlin, and have found this of France is the great wheel that moves them all." It was in February, 1777, that Dr. Lee was elected as the commissioner from Congress to proceed to Madrid and endeavor to interest the Spanish court in the struggle between England and the Colonies. As soon as the British ministry heard of his appointment they instructed their minister at Madrid to protest against his reception. In consequence, Dr. Lee stopped at Burgos, by an order not to proceed further. He returned so spirited a protest that the Spanish government finally allowed him to proceed to Madrid; once there, he exerted himself with great zeal to influence that court, but with no definite result. The Spanish, being afraid to provoke the English ministry, were plentiful in promises and assurances of the good-will of the king and people. Finally Dr. Lee was granted permission to make contracts with any merchants, etc., for arms and amunition: and the Spanish ambassador at Paris was instructed to keep up a friendly intercourse with the American commissioners at that capital. From this intercourse they finally obtained a large loan.

William Lee, his brother, then stationed at The Hague, was selected by Congress to act as their agent at Berlin. When this appointment was received at Paris, the commissioners there decided that William should remain in Holland, as his services there were too valuable to make it advisable for him

to go to Berlin. Consequently, they decided that Dr. Lee should take his commission, and proceed to Berlin in his place. This he did, but he found the difficulties in the way for accomplishing any good for America were very great, as Frederick the Great was under treaty obligations to England, and was not bound in any way to America. The objects of his mission were to establish communication between Prussia and America; to prevent any further raising of German auxiliaries for the English army, and to gain permission to purchase supplies. In these designs Dr. Lee succeeded partially; Frederick refused to receive him officially, and thus recognize the United States, but he authorized his minister to conduct a secret correspondence with him. While residing at Berlin someone stole his private papers from his room at the hotel; Dr. Lee immediately complained to the King. An answer was returned by the King that the police would investigate the affair, which resulted in the prompt return of the papers. At the request of Frederick, the English government recalled their envoy, it being proved that he was concerned in the theft of the papers.

Dr. Lee continued to correspond with Baron Schulenberg, the Prussian minister, after his return to Paris. In one letter Schulenberg wrote:

"....The events of this war become every day more interesting. I again pray you to communicate to me regularly all the news you may receive. The King seems much interested in it. His Majesty wishes that your efforts may be crowned with success, and as I told you in mine of the 13th of December, he will not hesitate to acknowledge your in-

dependency as soon as France, which is more immediately interested in the issue of the contest, shall set the example."

Shortly after the news of the surrender of General Burgoyne at Saratoga, was received, the French court began negotiations for signing a treaty with America; in these negotiations Dr. Lee took a prominent part, and was one of the signers of that treaty on the part of America.

That General Washington esteemed Dr. Lee, and valued his communications, is evident from this note to him:

"Newburg, April 15th, 1782. Dear Sir,—I have received your favor of the 2d, and thank you for the several articles of European intelligence contained in it. Permit me to solicit a continuation of such advises as you may think interesting respecting the military and political manoeuvers of foreign powers. Such communications will not only be a private gratification, but may produce public good; as a perfect knowledge of these matters will enable me to decide with more certainty and precision on doubtful operations, which may be had in contemplation, than I could possibly do without. With great esteem and regard, I am, my dear sir, your most obedient, humble servant."

Whatever coolness may have existed between Arthur Lee and the court of Versailles, it did not prevent the King from paying him a very handsome compliment, which he explained in this letter to the President of Congress:

"Mr. President,——I return to you, in consequence of the resolution with which I engaged in this cause, to see the liberty of my country established, or to perish in her last struggle.

"When I took leave of the court of Versailles as one of your former commissioners, his excellency the Count de Vergennes, presented me with a gold enamelled snuff-box, containing the picture of the King of France, set with diamonds. The minister accompanied it with the assurance that he delivered it to me as a mark of the esteem of his sovereign. In my opinion no period ever produced a prince whose esteem was more valuable. His portrait is engraven on my mind by the virtue and justice which form his character; and gold and jewels can add nothing to its luster.

"This testimony of his majesty's esteem, however flattering to me, I received with the resolution of holding it at your disposal only. I therefore now beg leave, agreeably to what I think my duty, to deposit it with Congress: for I esteem it of dangerous consequence, that any republican should receive presents from a foreign prince or retain them without the knowledge and consent of the republic. Still more dangerous and unbecoming is it to measure the merits of those employed in the public service by them, or to make their characters depend on complimentary letters and praises from the followers of the court where they have resided. It is the most sure of all possible methods, to make them subservient where they ought to be independent, and lead them to substitute intrigue in the place of a due discharge of their duty, or sacrifice the interests of

their country to the inclinations of a foreign minister. If they do their duty to their country, their constituents ought best to know it; and the reward they are pleased to bestow upon them, is the sole and sufficient recompense becoming the dignity of a free citizen to possess."

In reply this report was made: "In the Continental Congress: The committee to whom was referred the letter of Arthur Lee, Esq., etc., submitted the following report: Arthur Lee having deposited with the President of Congress a picture of the King of France, set with diamonds, and presented by the minister of that monarch on his taking leave of the court of Versailles as a mark of his majesty's esteem; and having intimated that as the picture was presented to him in consequence of his having been a commissioner of Congress at that court, it did not become him to retain the same without the express approbation of Congress:

"**Resolved,** That he be informed that Congress approves of his retaining the picture.

"**Resolved,** That Mr. Lee be further informed, in answer to his letter, that there is no particular charge against him before Congress properly supported; and that he be assured his recall was not intended to affix any kind of censure on his character, or his conduct abroad."

As a further mark of their confidence, Congress requested Dr. Lee to give them the benefit of his knowledge of any views upon foreign affairs. He

rendered a strict and satisfactory account of all the funds expended by him.

After his return to Virginia, Dr. Lee was elected a deputy from Prince William to the Virginia Assembly, and later, by the Assembly, to the general Congress. He was one of the signers of the treaty for the cession of the northwestern territory by Virginia to the general government. In 1784 he was appointed by Congress one of the commissioners to make a treaty with the Indians on the northwestern frontier; Lafayette accompanied this expedition. On their return Dr. Lee was appointed to the "board of treasury," with Samuel Osgood and Walter Livingston, in which position he continued from 1784 to 1789. In 1786 he was chosen one of the commissioners to revise the laws of Virginia. From the board of treasury he retired to private life, and lived upon his estate in Middlesex County. During the years spent in this retreat he carried on a very extensive correspondence with many of the prominent persons to whom his official career had made him known.

A writer has said: "The career of Arthur Lee, though undistinguished by any connection with the great and prominent events, such as catch the public eye, was one of the most important and useful to his country, which the history of that day records. At a time when the new born republic was struggling for existence, and carrying on a war against a powerful country with which the nations of Europe were at peace, and to which they were bound by treaties, he represented his country with a zeal and efficiency which accomplished the greatest and most valuable results. His mind seems to have burned

with a restless ardor, and he never rested in his attempts to conciliate the courts of Europe in favor of America, and to induce them to furnish her with material aid."

As a mark of their approbation for his services as their agent abroad, the states of Massachusetts and Virginia both granted him large tracts of land. Harvard College conferred upon him the honorary degree of LL.D.; the Academy of American Arts and Sciences, and the American Philosophical Society elected him an honorary member.

While upon the expedition to the western Indians, already mentioned, Dr. Lee penned these thoughts, which are very interesting:

"Being this day indisposed, and obliged to keep my room, I could not avoid meditating upon my future prospects. Should I settle and remain among my friends in Virginia; should I retire to Kentucky; or return to England, and enjoy in retirement there all that a great country in arts and sciences affords. I entered life glowing with sentiments of liberty and virtue. The seeds of the American Revolution were then sowing, in the acts of Parliament for imposing taxes on the Colonies. I embraced the opposition with a double degree of enthusiasm, which the love of liberty and my country inspired. I devoted myself to the cause from its very infancy. From that time my life has been a continued scene of agitation and commotion. No calm, no repose has refreshed me. To live in Virginia without a wife is hardly practicable. But in Virginia boys and girls only marry, and they marry from almost every motive but love. A man at thirty, a woman at twenty, is

old in Virginia; and with my sentiments of love and marriage I am not likely to find a wife, there.....

"Shall I retire to Kentucky, and try my fortune in a younger country and a rising region? The soil and climate are fine. I have lands there, which would become very valuable by residence; and it would be easy, with a little money, to acquire a princely territorial property. Ambition and avarice seem therefore to join in their invitation. But after the scenes through which I have passed such an ambition seems LOW, and the avarice, without an incentive. For whom should I sacrifice present enjoyment to secure a future fortune? He who pursues ambition in that country must expect no repose. He must first agitate its SEPARATION and INDEPENDENCE, then control the various turbulent spirits which are gathered there from different States: he must court those whose lives and manners are little removed from those of savages. He must be in perpetual action, as nothing else can promote his purposes, or even prevent him from repining at the loss of everything that can engage the cultivated mind or gratify the senses. He must submit to the wretched accommodations which an almost savage country can afford; and not only be content without luxuries, but even without the necessaries of life. What is there then that can tempt a sober man, in my situation, to Kentucky?

"A single man, intent upon gratifying his taste, might accomplish this purpose with great certainty, and at a moderate expense, in London. Secure of 600 pounds a year, he might live in style perfectly genteel, and see and hear every thing worth seeing

and hearing. But then he must live for himself only. He must forget that he has relations in another land, near and dear, whom he has sacrificed forever. All the charities of blood and country must be forgotten. His hours of retirement must be sad and solitary. Should ill-health overtake him, he must not only cut off from the enjoyment he promised himself, but he must expect no tender hand to soothe his pillow, no sympathising soul to mitigate with nameless gentle offices the anguish of disease, and minister to the troubled and desponding mind. And why indeed should he, who lives for himself only, expect that society will feel for him, or furnish him with aid or solace, beyond the influence of his money?

"Those, too, with whom I was immediately connected in friendship and politics, when a fellow-subject, would regard me now with cold indifference, if not with aversion. Many would consider me as having contributed to wound and dishonor that country which is the dearest object to every good Englishman. Could I be restored to the situation that I enjoyed before the Revolution, unless the tumult of political commotion may have unparadised it, I might be happy. That is, as happy as man without domestic cares, domestic anxiety, and domestic love, could be. I was placed in chambers in the Temple, which looked into a delightful little garden on the Thames, of which I had the key; I could go in and out at all hours, and have what company I pleased, without being questioned or overlooked. I was near the Royal Society, of which I was a fellow, where every week, whatever was new and ingenious in literature was communicated. Not far from me was

the hall of the Society of Arts and Agriculture, of which I was an honorary member, and where I had access to all the new discoveries in arts, agriculture, and mechanics.

"The play houses and the opera were equally convenient, where I could select the opportunity of seeing the best tragedies and comedies represented, and of hearing the most exquisite music. I was a subscriber to Bach's and Abel's concert, where the most masterly performers of the world (Bach, Abel, Fishar, Tassot, Ponto, and Crosdal,) played to a most polite and fashionable audience, in one of the most elegant concert rooms in the world. In the field of politics, from the politician in the cider-cellar to the peer in his palace, I had access and influence. At the Bill of Rights, the city of London, the East India House, and with the opposition in both houses, I was of some consideration. Among my particular friends, to whom I always had access, were Lord Shelburne, Mr. Downing, Col. Barre. Mr. Wilkes, Sergeant Glynn, and several others. I was so well with several of the nobility and gentry that I could spend all my leisure time at their country seats. At Bath I had a very extensive acquaintance; and there is not in the world a more agreeable place to one so circumstanced. As one of the law, I enjoyed the protection and distinction of that body, with the prospect of rising to place and profit, which all of that body, who have moderate abilities, enjoy. So circumstanced, nothing but the peculiar and extraordinary crisis of the times prevented me from being entirely happy, and pursuing the fortune which sat with golden plumes within my reach.

But everything was absorbed in the great contest which I saw fast approaching; and which soon called upon me to quit London, and take an open part in the Revolution, as a representative of the United States at the Court of France."

---

**Henry Lee.**

Henry Lee 4, third child of Henry 3, (Richard 2, Richard 1,) born at "Lee Hall" Westmoreland County, in 1729, settled at "Leesylvania" in Prince William County. He was a Justice of the Peace in that county and represented it as burgess in 1758-61-62-63-64-69-72. In the Convention of 1774-75-76, and in the State Senate in 1780. He served as County Lieutanant for Prince William County during the Revolutionary War, and was attorney for the county.

Mr. Grigsby, in his discourse on "The Virginia Convention of 1776," said: "Henry Lee, of Prince William, was an old member of the House of Burgesses, of all the Conventions, of the Declaratory Committee, and of the General Assembly. His standing was the first, before and after the Revolution."

The following are some extracts of letters written by him which will show the interest he took in the great struggle for independence.

"Leesylvania, April 1st, 1775.....I have just returned from our Convention at Richmond Town on the James River, where 118 Delegates of the People met and unanimously approved of the Proceedings of the General Congress, and thanked their Dele-

gates. The same Delegates were appointed to represent this Colony in the Continental Congress on the 10th of May next at Philadelphia. Our Militia of Independents are ordered by the Convention to be armed and well disciplined, and a great spirit of Liberty actuates every Individual. The Dutch supply us plentifully with arms and ammunition, and several large importations of oznabugs we have already had, so that we shall soon have a plenty of coarse linens from Holland. Your Brother, the Doctor's Conduct and Letters to the Speaker, etc. are highly appreciated, and I make no doubt of his being appointed our Agent when the Assembly meets."

To Wm. Lee; London.

Under date of May 15th, 1775, he wrote to the same party:

"I humbly think your business here is really illy conducted, and you must have an active agent here of influence, who has weight with the Planters, and will exert himself should the tobacco trade be ever again revived; the present prospect being very unabiding, for the people in the country have already taken up arms and have compelled Lord Dunmore to pay 350 pounds sterling for a quantity of powder that he privately in the night removed out of the magazine on board the Foye, Capt. Montague. Ten thousand rifle men are now well trained and are ready to take the field at an hour's warning. The die is now cast, and a blow having been struck near Boston, in which rencounter the King's troops were beaten with the loss of 150 men, besides many wounded, and the country people only lost 40 men. The inhabitants

have all left Boston, and that place is now surrounded by 20,000 Provincials and 10,000 Connecticut troops are marched to the assistance of New York; also 1,500 rifle men from Fredk. County in Maryland, under Col. Cressip, Jr. (?) to prevent any troops landing. This is the news of the day."

To Charles Lee, Esqr., in
Philadelphia:

"Leesylvania, September 8th, 1779.

Dear Charles:

I received your agreeable letter by post, but without date; the best way is dating letters at the top, for fear of omitting in the hurry of conclusion. Your brother's enterprise does him signal honour, and I flatter myself it will not be in the power of his enemies to pluck from him those laurels they cannot acquire, and on his conduct being inquired into, his military fame will be raised. I agree with you that the surprise at Paulus Hook casts a shade on Stony Point; the enclosed letter to him, pray contrive safely. Vessels are daily arriving here and Gen'l Mercer is hourly expected.

I saw your letter to Col. Blackburn, and wish the war may be carried on without the aid of money press, but borrowing, I fear from the spirit of monopoly and avidity for gain, will not be sufficient to supply the call for the sums necessary for the great expenditures of the Army. The other States ought to follow our example by a specific tax of grain to supply the Army with provisions.

To William Lee, in
London:

"Leesylvania, March 1st, 1775.

Dear Sir:

I have the melancholy news to inform you of your brother, Col. Phil's death, who died at Stratford of a nervous pleurisy on the 21st of last month and has left Mrs. Lee, his widow very big with child; in him Virginia has lost an able Judge and America a truly great patriot; this vacancy I hope you will use your utmost efforts to fill up in Council with your Brother Thomas, of France, as the former will inherit all your brother's real estate in Westmoreland, by your father's will, unless Mrs. Lee's child should be a son. I could wish the Honor of the family to be fixed at Stratford, as to your brother, Col. Richard Henry, I would by no means have him out of the House of Burgesesses, as there is at present the greatest reason to expect he will succeed Mr. Randolph as Speaker, who is old and infirm. I expect before this my Bill in favor of Duncan Campbell has been presented and duly honoured for 24 pounds sterling and that the James, Capt. Robertson has safely landed my two Hhds. of Toba.: and of course, to a good market, as no Toba. will after this Crop be Exported unless American Grievances are redressed as are pointed out by the General Congress.

"We are making large quantities of Salt Peter from the Nitre in the Tobacco Putrified and have made some very strong well grained powder in this county, therefrom, which ketches quick and shoots with great force, so that we shall be able in future to supply ourselves with Salt Peter and gun powder without importing any. Wool cards we are making in great quantities and nails will be soon made as ———— mills are erecting thro' every Province

on the Continent. The gentlemen are training themselves thro' the Continent every week and have raised companys who muster two days every week and emulate to excell each other in ye manual manoeuvers and evolutions as practiced by the King of Prussia's Troops, for we are determined on preserving our libertys if necessary at the expense of our blood, being resolved not to survive slavery. You may rely on it that the Continental Association will be most sacred kept as the county committee will not suffer the least breach to pass unnoticed, and are very watchful. Pray present our most aff't compl'ts to Mrs. Lee."

Henry Lee to "Charles Lee, Esqr., Student of Law in Philadelphia." Dated, Wm'b'g. June 12th, 1779.

My Dear Charles:

I received yours of the 1st, June, by post and several others, since being on the Assembly, and have regularly by every post from this wrote you the news, and particular occurences from this quarter and as far as accounts from Lincoln's Army, circulated from the report or lie of the day, my l't'r by the last post, I yet hope you will receive. In that I gave you a particular account of an action reported with the circumstances of undoubted belief to be given to the credibility of the fact, which a few days ago was further confirmed by two Frenchmen, who left Charlestown, the 11th, May, who said they were there at the time Provost Army attempted to take the city by storm, and that 650 of the enemy were killed on the spot and their whole Army routed, which I now believe to be a cursed lie, for there is come to this city a deserter from the enemy who

left Charlestown on the 16th, and says no action had then happened, but that it was more than probable, without aid to effect their escape by their shipping, which were not arrived when he left the Army. They must fall as Burgoyne did: for that the town was too well fortified and the garrison two strong for their force, which only consisted of 2,000 regulars and about the same number of Tories and Indians. That General Moultree who had entered the town with about 2,500 and General Williamson with about the same number were on their front and flank and General Lincoln within eight miles in their rear with his main Army. That our whole force collected was about 8,000 and the enemy had taken shelter in St. James Island and burnt some houses and it would be difficult for our Army to get at them, that they were short of provisions and if could not soon be relieved from their shipping they would be obliged to surrender or starve. This is nearly the purport of his examination before the Governor, though many give no credit to his account and still believe the Frenchmen's story. The truth is, I believe, they had some small skirmishing and we got the better. I wrote you fully in my two last of the predatory and cruel behaviour of the late invaders of this State, which if you have not received, let suffice that they far surpassed the brutal lust the goat or in ferocity, the wild boar, in barbarity the savages or the vandals. Tell your brother I will take notice of his request in two ltrs, I have received from him and on my return, write him fully as to the state of his mares, etc., and as soon as I get home, shall endeavor to contrive you a remittance. The expenses of your Philadelphia studies, when you had taken my advice,

might in a great measure been saved, had you applied your hours wasted in idle pursuits of dissipation to Cook, Blackstone, etc., having had a general knowledge of the system of law tracts. Possessing the fundamental principles, you might have been now employed in reading the reports and applying the practical cases and digesting the reasoning of the pleaders, and Judges on the applied maxims; my—— this year will be near 2,000 pounds sterling. I shall be always happy to hear from you and of your application and frugality, which is commendable at all times .

Henry Lee's will was dated August 10th, 1787, and probated in Prince William County, October 1st, 1787.

Henry Lee married Lucy Grymes, to whom tradition has given the name of the "Lowland Beauty," and claimed that General Washington was once a suitor for her hand.

Henry and Lucy (Grymes) Lee had eight children.

I—Henry 5. See page 146.

II—Charles 5. See page 168.

III—Richard Bland 5. See page 172.

IV—Theodorick 5. See page 174.

V—Edmund Jennings 5. See page 176.

VI—Lucy 5, born 1774, died unmarried.

VII—Mary 5, born ....., died ....., married about 1792, Philip Richard Fendall, of Alexandria. Mr. Fendall had previously married the widow of Philip Ludwell Lee, of Startford. She died about 1790.

VIII—Anne 5, born 1776, died August 1857, married 1793, Wm. Byrd Page, of "Fairfield," Clarke County.

## FIFTH GENERATION.

### Thomas Ludwell Lee.

THOMAS Ludwell 5, first son of Thomas Ludwell 4, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born..... died in 1807, married Fanny, daughter of Robert W. Carter, of "Sabine Hall," Richmond County. He resided at "Coton," near Leesburg in Loudoun County.

Thomas Ludwell and Fanny (Carter) Lee had eight children.

I—Thomas Ludwell 6, who died in infancy.

II—Elizabeth 6, married her cousin, St. Ledger Landon Carter, and left no children.

III—Mary Aylett 6, married Tench Ringgold, and had issue, among them a daughter from whom the Hon. Edw. D. White, former U. S. Senator, from La., and present Chief Justice of the U. S. Supreme Court is descended.

IV—Winifred Beale 6, married William Brent, Jr. of "Richland," Stafford County.

V—Fanny Carter 6, died unmarried.

VI—Ann Lucinda 6, married John M. McCarty, of "Cedar Grove," Fairfax County.

VII—Catherine 6, died unmarried.

VIII—Sydner 6, probably a daughter and died unmarried.

---

### George Lee.

George 5, third child of Thomas Ludwell Lee 4, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1,) married Evelyn

Byrd, daughter of Robert Beverly, of "Wakefield," in Culpeper County, died at "Farmwell," Loudoun County, probably in June, 1805.

George and Evelyn Byrd (Beverly) Lee had:

I—Maria Carter 6, no record.

II—George 6. See page 190.

### Thomas Lee.

Thomas 5, first son of Richard Henry Lee 4, (Thos. 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at "Chantilly," Westmoreland County, October 20, 1758.

Studied in England and was there in 1776.

He lived at "Park Gate," in Prince William County, where he farmed and practiced law.

Was twice married, first in 1788 to Mildred, daughter of John Augustin and Hannah (Bushrod) Washington. General Washington, in writing to Sir Isaac Heard, of the Herald's Office, London, of his family said; "John Augustin Washington, son of Augustin and Mary (Ball) Washington, married Hannah Bushrod, and had, Bushrod, Corbin, and Mildred; Corbin married a daughter of the Honorable Richard Henry Lee; Mildred married Thomas Lee, son of the said R. H. Lee." His second marriage was to Eliza Ashton Brent, by this union he had two children, but only one survived.

I—Eleanor 6, born August 13, 1783; died November 1807, married Girard Alexander, of "Effingham," Prince William County, and left one son, Thos. Ludwell Alexander, a Colonel in the United States Army.

**Ludwell Lee.**

Ludwell 5, second son of Richard Henry Lee 4, (Thos. 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at "Chantilly," October 13, 1760, died at his home "Belmont," Loudoun County, March 23, 1836. He was educated in England and France.

His son, R. H. Lee, has given this anecdote of Ludwell, from whom he heard it:

"A son of Lee was at the time of the Declaration of Independence at school in St. Bees, in England. . One day, as this youth was standing near one of the professors of the academy, who was conversing with a gentleman of the neighboring county, he heard the question asked, 'What boy is this?' to which the professor answered, 'He is a son of Richard Henry Lee, of America.' The gentleman, upon hearing this, put his hand upon his head and said, 'We shall yet see your father's head upon "Tower Hill," ' to which the boy answered, 'You may have it when you can get it!' "

Under the date of June 30th, 1777, R. H. Lee wrote to his brother Arthur: ".....I have written by this opportunity to our brother William, supposing him to be in France. I told him that the times prevent me from making remittance, and therefore that my sons must be sent to me by the first good opportunity, if he cannot continue to advance for their frugal maintenance in France a small time longer.

I wish Ludwell to go deep into the study of Natural and Civil Law and Eloquence, as well as to obtain the military improvement you put him on, my desire being that he may be able to turn either to the law

or the sword here, as his genius or his interest and service of his country might point out. I want Tom to possess himself of the knowledge of business, either in Mr. Schweighauser's counting house or under his uncle, if he should go into business that may be intrusted to his care. But all or any part of this plan depends, I apprehend, entirely on their uncle William. Should any unhappy accident have befallen him and thereby prevented him from coming to France, I must rely on you to direct them to be sent over to me by the first opportunity."

Southern Literary Messenger Vol 28, No. 6-429

After his death this sketch was published in the Leesburg paper, by Mr. R. H. Henderson, of that place:

"Departed this life, on the night of Wednesday the 23d ult., at his residence in this county, Ludwell Lee, Esq., in the 76th year of his age. Mr. Lee, the oldest son of the illustrious orator, statesman, and patriot, Richard Henry Lee, rose in manhood during the memorable struggle in which his father won an undying fame. True to the principles and spirit of that father, the subject of the passing notice flew from the shades of the Academy to the standard of his country; and, as one of the military family of the heroic and generous, Lafayette followed it and crowned it with glorious peace. Mr. Lee engaged in the profession of the law, but, blessed with an ample fortune, he withdrew from it at an early period, yet not until he had exhibited to his friends and his country those powers and attainments which would, under different circumstances, have rendered him one of its brightest ornaments.

"He was a distinguished member of the Virginia Legislature, and presided over the deliberations of the Senate with approved ability, dignity, and courtesy in the palmiest days of this once renowned commonwealth. But the strife and tumult of the political arena were as distasteful to him as were those of the bar. His character was essentially gentle, tranquil, and benevolent; and although he died, as he had lived, an unwavering disciple of our own Washington, the suavity of his manners always kept pace with the rectitude and firmness of his purpose. In the walks of private life, amid the social circle, at the sacred family hearth, Ludwell Lee shone with a mild and constant lustre:—here he displayed learning without ostentation; wit without one solitary tincture of unkindness; affection which soothed and gladdened all around him. Not unscathed by sorrow in the evening of his life, he sought solace and support from Him who never forsake those who cleave to Him in sincerity and humility. In a word, to the good man and the gentleman he added that better character which makes worldly merit less than dust in the balance. He breathed out his spirit, at last, without a groan; and has gone to rejoin in the realms of ceasless peace and bliss that Lafayette, under whose chivalrous eye he drew his youthful sword, and who came, after so many chances and changes, to embrace him again in the classic retirement of Belmont. His life happily illustrates the sublime truth, "The Christian is the highest type of man." He was a Christian in all the truth, in all the purity, in all the meekness, in all the Catholic love and charity of that endearing name.

"The places that knew him shall know him no

more; he has gone where the approving smiles of his Heavenly Father shall succeed to the tears and sighs of his beloved children."

An old colored man, probably once a servant of Ludwell Lee's, recently told, in the graphic language of his race, of the visit of Lafayette, to Loudoun; of how the mansions of Belmont and Coton were decorated, of the double line of lanterns which connected the two houses, that guests might readily pass from one to the other, either one of the mansions being too small to contain "all the country" that were bidden to meet the gallant Frenchman.

Ludwell Lee was twice married; first about January 23rd, 1788, to his first cousin, Flora, daughter of Phillip Ludwell, and Elizabeth (Steptoe) Lee, of Stratford, by whom he had three children. He was married, secondly, in 1797, to Elizabeth, daughter of Bowles, and Mary (Fontaine) Armistead, by whom he had six children.

He resided first at "Shooter's Hill," near Alexandria, and later at "Belmont," near Leesburg. His first wife died and was buried at "Shooter's Hill," her tomb was to be seen there prior to the late Civil War. He was buried at Belmont.

By his first wife, Flora (Lee) Lee, he had three children.

I—Richard Henry 6. See page 292.

II—Cecilia 6, born 1720, married James L. McKenna and left no issue.

III—Eliza Matilda 6, born September 13, 1791, died January 22, 1875, married, 1811, Richard H. Love, of Fairfax County and left issue.

By his second wife, Elizabeth (Armistead) Lee, he had six children.

IV—Mary Ann 6, born April 8, 1789, married Gen. Robert B. Campbell, of South Carolina.

V—Ellen McMacken 6, born April 15, 1802, married first Thomas Bedford, of Kentucky and had one child. In 1844 married the Rev. Nathaniel Phippen Knapp and had two children.

VI—Elizabeth Armistead 6, born March 23, 1804, married Wilson Cary Selden, of Exeter, near Leesburg, Va. Died at Berlin, Worcester County, Md., May 23, 1887.

VII—Emily 6, died unmarried, 1875.

VIII—Francis Lightfoot 6, married a Miss Rogers, of South Carolina, left no issue.

IX—Bowles Armistead 6, died unmarried. Probably entered West Point in 1828.

---

**Francis Lightfoot.**

Francis Lightfoot 5, ninth child of Richard Henry 4, (Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Chantilly, June 18, 1782, graduated from Harvard an A. B. in 1802, and in 1806 received his A. M.

He was a lawyer by profession, and resided at "Sully" in Fairfax County, not far distant from Alexandria and Washington. He died April 13th, 1850. He was twice married, his two wives having been sisters, and were daughters of Col. John, and Jane (Diggs) Fitzgerald, of Alexandria. By his first wife, Elizabeth, he had no surviving children; but by his second wife, Jane, whom he married on the 9th of February, 1810, he had five children.

I—Jane Elizabeth 6, born 1811, died 1837, married Henry T. Harrison, of Loudoun County, and left one daughter, who died unmarried in 1870.

II—Samuel Phillips 6. See page 179.

III—John Fitzgerald 6. See page 185.

IV—Arthur 6, died unmarried at Louisville, Ky., August 7, 1841.

V—Francis Anne 6, born at Bladensburg, Md., June 30, 1816, died, December 5, 1889, married first, September 6, 1842, to Goldsborough Robinson and had two children.

Married second, November 6, 1856, to William Frederick Pettit and had one child.

**Major-General Henry Lee.**

(Light Horse Harry).

Henry 5, eldest child of Henry 4, (Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), was born at Leesylvania, January 29, 1756, died at Cumberland Island, Ga., March 25, 1818.

After receiving the usual rudimentary education at home, Henry was sent to Princeton College, where he graduated in 1773. Dr. William Shippen wrote to R. H. Lee, in 1770: "Your cousin, Henry Lee, is in college and will be one of the first fellows in this country. He is more than strict in his morality, has fine genius and is diligent. Charles is in the grammer school, but Dr. Witherspoon expects much from his genius and application." (Dr. Witherspoon was then the President of Princeton College). On leaving college, Henry was for some time employed in looking after the private affairs of his father, who was absent from home, engaged in negotiating a treaty with some Indian tribes in behalf of the colony of Virginia. The next year he was intending to embark for England to pursue the study of the law; but the dark shadows of war were already threatening, and changed the prospective lawyer into an actual soldier. His later career seems to have proven him well qualified for the profession of the law, and it is probable that, had he entered the political arena, he would have made for himself a reputation of no mean proportion as an orator and legislator.

Henry Lee was foremost among those who took an active part in organizing and drilling the militia of Virginia; in consequence, he was appointed, in 1776, by Patrick Henry, then governor of the State, a captain of one of the companies of calvary in the Virginia regiment commanded by Colonel Theodorick Bland. Lee soon distinguished himself by his thorough discipline of his troopers, as well as by the care and attention given to their horses and equipment. He wrote his colonel, under the date

of April 13th, 1777, ".... How happy would I be, if it was possible for my men to be furnished with caps and boots, prior to my appearance at head-quarters! You know, my dear colonel, that, justly, an officer's reputation depends not only on the discipline, but appearance of his men. Could the articles mentioned be allowed my troop, their appearance into Morris (Morristown) would secure me from the imputation of carelessness as their captain, and I have vanity enough to hope would assist in procuring some little credit to the Colonel and regiment. Pardon my solicitations on any head respecting the condition of my troop; my sole object is the credit of the regiment."

At the time the letter was written, Colonel Bland's regiment had joined the Army under Washington, and Lee was about to make his first appearance "at head-quarters." His appearance must have been such as he desired, or his subsequent behavior in active service must have been successful, for he appears to have won the esteem and affection of Washington very early in the war. It is certain that he was frequently employed by his commander on confidential missions and hazardous expeditions. "He was favorably noticed by Washington throughout the war," wrote Irving. At one time the General wrote to Lee: ".... You may in future or while on your present command, mark your letters PRIVATE;" this to an officer only twenty-three years old surely indicated confidence and esteem. In fact, his extreme youth seems to have been the sole reason why due rank was not awarded his military merit. He was too youthful to be elevated over the heads

of men so much his senior in years, though probably his inferior in military talent.

This letter attest the kind feeling of appreciation in which Lee was held by his great chief:

"My Dear Lee,—Although I have given you my thanks in the general orders of this day, for the late instance of your gallant behaviour, I cannot resist the inclination I feel to repeat them again in this manner. I needed no fresh proofs of your merit, to bear you in my remembrance. I waited only for the proper time and season to show it; those, I hope are not far off. I shall also think of and will reward the merit of Lindsay, when an opportunity presents, as far as I can consistently; and shall not forget the corporal, whom you have recommended to my notice. Offer my sincere thanks to the whole of your gallant party, and assure them that no one felt pleasure more sensibly, or rejoiced more sincerely for your and their escape, than your affectionate," etc.

The skirmish referred to by Washington was an attempt on the part of the British to capture Lee. They attached sufficient importance to making him their prisoner to send a troop of 200 horse to secretly surround his headquarters, when they had ascertained he was near their lines and accompanied by only ten men. The Americans manned the windows of the house and succeeded in beating off the assailants. Lee reported, "The contest was very warm; the British dragoons trusting to their vast superiority in number, attempted to force their way into the house. In this they were baffled by the bravery of my men. After having left two killed and four wounded, they desisted and sheered off."

The skill and daring of Lee soon won such favor in the eyes of his chief, that Washington urged Congress to give him command of an independent corps, for scouting and foraging. In a letter to the President of Congress he wrote:

"Captain Lee, of the Light Dragoons, and the officers under his command, having uniformly distinguished themselves by a conduct of exemplary zeal, prudence, and bravery, I took occasion, on a late signal instance of it, to express the high sense I entertained of their merit, and to assure him that it should not fail of being properly noticed. I was induced to give the assurance from a conviction that it is the wish of Congress to give every encouragement to merit, and that they would cheerfully embrace so favorable an opportunity of manifesting this disposition. I had it in contemplation at the time, in case no other method more eligible could be adopted, to make an offer of a place in my family. I have consulted the committee of Congress on the subject, and we are mutually of the opinion, that giving Captain Lee command of two troops of horse on the proposed establishment, with the rank of major, to act as independent corps, would be a mode of rewarding him very advantageous to the service. Captain Lee's genius particularly adapts him to a command of this nature and it will be the most agreeable to him of any station in which he could be placed."

Shortly after this, Lee was given the command of three companies each of cavalry and of infantry, to operate as an independent corps. By the attention

he gave to the discipline of his men, and the care of their horses, he kept his troops so well mounted and so effective that they were able to move with great rapidity and daring. In consequence of their dash and bravery in scouting and foraging, they acquired quite a reputation, and he, the soubriquet of "Light-Horse Harry," a name which has ever clung to him. On the 19th of July, 1779, at the head of three hundred men, Lee surprised and captured Paulus Hook, New Jersey, securing some 160 prisoners, and retreated with the loss of only two killed and three

wounded. For "his prudence, address, and bravery," on this and other occasions, Congress voted the following resolutions. By the Act of 7th of April, 1778, it was

"Resolved, whereas, Captain Henry Lee, of the Light Dragoons, by the whole tenor of his conduct during the last campaign, has proved himself a brave and prudent officer rendered essential service to his country, and acquired to himself and the corps he commanded, distinguished honor, and it being the determination of Congress to reward merit.

Resolved, that Captain Henry Lee be promoted to the rank of Major-Commandant; that he be empowered to augment his present corps by enlistment of two corps of horse, to act as a separate corps."

By the act of September 24th, 1779, it was

"Resolved, that the thanks of Congress be given to Major Lee for the remarkable prudence, address and bravery displayed in the attack on the enemy's fort and works at Paulus Hook, and that they approve the humanity shown in circumstances prompting to severity, as honorable to the arms of the United States, and correspondent to the noble principles on which they were assumed, and that a gold medal, emblematic of this affair, be struck under the direction of the Board of Treasury, and presented to Major Lee."

After serving for three years in the campaigns of the northern army, Lee was ordered south to join General Greene with whom he served until his final retirement from the army after the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown. Greene commended him by declaring that "no man in the progress of the campaign had equal merit." When it is remembered that Lee served there with such soldiers as Morgan, Marion, Pickens, Sumpter, and other gallant officers, the full extent of this praise will be appreciated. About October, 1780, Congress proposed to re-organize the army somewhat, and among the changes considered was the placing of Lee's corps in one of the regular regiments. Washington opposed this change, and wrote October 11th, 1780, to the President of

Congress: "....Major Lee has rendered such distinguished services, possesses so many talents for commanding a corps of this nature, and deserves so much credit for the perfection in which he keeps his corps, as well as for the handsome exploits which he has performed, that it would be a loss to the service, and a discouragement to merit, to reduce him, and I do not see how he can be introduced into one of the regiments in a manner satisfactory to himself, and which will enable him to be equally useful, without giving too much disgust to the whole line of cavalry." This protest had due effect, and Lee retained the command of his partisan corps, being also advanced to the rank of lieutenant colonel. In writing to John Matthews, a member of Congress from South Carolina, Washington was even more complimentary to Lee. Under date of October 23rd, he wrote: ".....Lee's corps will go to the southward. I believe it will be found very useful. The corps itself is an excellent one, and the officer at the head of it HAS GREAT RESOURCES OF GENIUS."

Colonel Charles Cornwallis Chesney, of the English Army, in an article on General Robert E. Lee, speaks thus of his father: "From the very first he displayed military talent of a high order, and became before long the most noted leader of his army for dashing enterprise in separate command. A special gold medal was awarded him by Congress for his capture of the fort at Paulus Hook, and in 1781 he was sent to join the forces under General Greene, in the South, there matched against Cornwallis. That Greene failed, on the whole, in his encounter is well known. He was in fact in a position of inferiority, until Cornwallis left the South for Peters-

burg and the Richmond peninsular.....Greene however, though defeated, never ceased to hold his own stoutly against Cornwallis for the time, and afterwards recovered the Carolinas fully for Congress. His successes were due in great part to the talents and energy of his young cavalry commander. General Henry Lee had a worthy opponent in Colonel Tarleton, a cavalry officer of no mean merit in light warfare. But the republican cavalier established his superiority very fully in the series of skirmishes that ensued. And although, in his own Memoir of the War, he had the modesty to attribute his successes over Tarleton to his superiority in horse flesh, readers of his interesting work may discern for themselves that his own skill and judgment were the prime causes of the advantage, and will be disposed to agree to the full with General Greene, who wrote in his personal thanks, 'No man in the progress of the campaign had equal merit with yourself,' an expression of strong meaning coming from a plain, blunt soldier of honest character. And this praise was fully confirmed by Washington's own words of love and thanks, in a letter of later date, written long enough after to show how strong in that great man's mind was the memory of the services of 'Light-Horse Harry,' as his contemporaries familiarly called General Henry Lee."

Shortly after the surrender of Cornwallis, Lee resigned from the army, upon which occasion General Greene wrote him this letter:

"Headquarters, January 27th, 1782.

Dear Sir:—I have beheld with extreme anxiety for some time past a growing discontent in your

mind, and have not been without my apprehensions that your complaints originated more in distress than in ruin of your constitution. Whatever may be the source of your wounds, I wish it was in my power to heal them. . . . From our earliest acquaintance I had a partiality for you, which progressively grew in friendship. I was under no obligation to you until I came into this country; and yet I believe you will do me the justice to say I never wanted inclination to serve you. Here I have been under the greatest obligations,—obligations I can never cancel. . . . . I am far from agreeing with you in the opinion that the public will never do you justice. I believe few officers either in Europe or America, are held in so high a point of estimation as you are. Substantial service is what constitutes lasting reputation; and your reports of this campaign are the best panegyric that can be given of your action. . . . It is true, there are few of your countrymen, who from ignorance and malice are disposed to do injustice to your conduct, but it is out of their power to injure you. Indeed, you are ignorant of your own weight and influence, otherwise you would despise their spleen and malice. . . . . Everybody knows I have the highest opinion of you as an officer and you know I love you as a friend; whatever may be your determination, to retire or to continue in service, my affection will accompany you."

In a parting letter Greene adds (12th, February, 1782):

"You are going home and you will get married, but you cannot cease to be a soldier; should the war

rage here, I shall call for you in a few months, unless I should find your inclination opposed to my wishes."

General Charles Lee once said of him, that "Major Lee seemed to have come out of his mother's womb a soldier." Marshall, the early historian of Washington, has written: "The continued labors and exertions of all were highly meritorious, but the successful activity of one corps will attract particular attention. The legion, from its structure, was peculiarly adapted to the partisan warfare of the Southern States, and, by being detached against weaker posts of the enemy, and opportunities for displaying with advantage all the energies it possessed. In that extensive sweep which it made from the Santee to Augusta, which employed from the 15th of April to the 8th of June, this corps, acting in conjunction first with Marion, afterward with Pickens, and sometimes alone, had constituted the principal force which carried five British posts and made upward of 1100 prisoners."

Mr. Curtis has declared that, "No officer in the American Army could have been better fitted than Lee for the command of a partisan corps; for in the surprise of posts, in gaining intelligence, of distracting and discomforting your enemy, without bringing him to a general action, and all the strategy which belongs to the partisan warfare, few officers in any service have been more distinguished than the subject of our memoir. The legion of Lee, under the untiring labors of its active, talented commander, became one of the most efficient corps in the American army. The horsemen were principally recruit-

ed in the Southern and Middle States—countries proverbial for furnishing skillful riders; while the horses, under the inspection of the Virginian commander, were superior in bone and figure, and could many of them have boasted a lineal descent from the good and gallant Godolphin Arabian.

"Among Lee's officers were the good and gallant names of Eggleston, Rudolph, Armstrong, O'Neil, and the surviving honored veterans, Allen M'Lane, of Delaware, and Harrison, of Virginia. The arrival of the legion in the South was hailed as most auspicious to the success of our arms in that quarter; indeed, so fine a corps of horse and foot, so well disciplined, and in such gallant array, was rarely to be seen in those days of desolation. The partisan legion did good service in the campaigns of the Carolinas, and the commander won his way to the esteem and confidence of Greene, the WELL-BELOVED OF WASHINGTON, as he had previously done to the esteem and confidence of the great chief himself; and, as a justice of the great military sagacity of Lee, let it be remembered, that he was mainly instrumental in advising Greene to that RETURN TO THE CAROLINAS, which eventuated in the decisive and glorious combat of Eutaw, and the virtual liberation of the South. With the close of the campaign of 1781 ended the military services of Lieutenant-Colonel Lee. He retired on furlough to Virginia, and was happily present at the surrender of his old adversary, the formidable Cornwallis, 19th of October. Lee married shortly afterward, and settled at Stratford, in the county of Westmoreland, but was permitted, by his grateful and admiring countrymen, for a short time only to enjoy the *OTIUM CUM*

*DIGNITATE*, being successively chosen to the State legislature, the convention for ratifying the constitution, the gubernatorial chair, and the Congress of the United States."

During all his services in these legislative bodies, Henry Lee was an ardent federalists, ably supporting Madison, and others in their efforts for securing the ratification of the Constitution by the Virginia Convention. In taking this position he was an antagonist of his cousin, Richard Henry Lee, yet the latter considered his services so valuable to the State that he was anxious for him to be in the Virginia Assembly. Under date of July 14th, 1787, R. H. Lee wrote his brother, Arthur: "I do really consider it a thing of consequence to the public interest that Col. H. Lee, of Stratford should be in our next Assembly, and therefore wish you would exert yourself with the old squire, (Richard Lee) to get his resignation, or disqualification rather, so that his nephew may get early into the House of Delegates. I know it is like persuading a man to sign his own death warrant, but upon my word the state of public affairs renders the sacrifice of place and vanity, necessary."

Henry Lee was governor of Virginia for three years; while in this office, Washington appointed him to command the troops ordered out to suppress the "Whiskey Rebellion," which occurred in western Pennsylvania, in 1794: he succeeded in quelling the rebellion without bloodshed. On July 19th, 1798, he was appointed a major-general in the army, and was honorably discharged June, 15th, 1800. Being a member of Congress in 1799, when the news of the death of Washington was received by Congress, he

drew up a series of resolutions, formally announcing that event, which were presented in his absence, by his colleague, John Marshall; in these resolution occur those ever memorable words: "FIRST IN WAR, FIRST IN PEACE, AND FIRST IN THE HEARTS OF HIS FELLOW-CITIZENS." Thereupon, Congress resolved that "the President of the Senate and the Speaker of the House of Representatives, be desired to request one of the members of Congress to perform and deliver an oration. Henry Lee was selected to pay this tribute on behalf of Congress to the great Washington, and the oration was delivered before Congress on the 26th of December, 1799, at the "German Lutheran Church, in 4th street, above Arch, Philadelphia, the largest in the city."

Of this oration Mr. Custis has written, as one who had heard it: "With the advantages of a classic education, General Lee possessed taste and distinguished powers of eloquence; and was selected, on the demise of Washington, to deliver the oration in the funeral solemnities decreed by Congress in honor of the Pater Patriae. The oration having been but imperfectly committed to memory, from the very short time in which it was composed, somewhat impaired its effects upon the auditory; but, as a composition, it has only to be read to be admired, for the purity and elegance of its language, and the powerful appeal it makes to the hearts of its readers; and we will adventure to affirm, that it will rank among the most celebrated performances of those highly distinguished men who mounted the rostrum on that imposing occasion of national mourning."

Mr. Custis adds: "In one particular, Lee may be

said to have excelled his illustrious contempories, Marshall, Madison, Hamilton, Gouverneur Morris and Ames. It was a surprising quickness of talent, a genius sudden, dazzling, and always at command, with an eloquence which seemed to flow unbidden. Seated at a convivial board when the death of Patrick Henry was announced, Lee called for a scrap of paper, and in a few moments produced a striking and beautiful elogium upon the Demosthenes of modern liberty. His powers of conversation were also fascinating in the extreme, possessing those rare and admiral qualities which seize and hold captive his hearers, delighting while they instruct. That Lee was a man of letters, a scholar who had ripened under a truly classical sun, we have only to turn to his work on the southern war, where he was, indeed, the Magna pars fui of all which he relates—a work which well deserves to be ranked with the commentaries of the famed master of the Roman world, who, like our Lee, was equally renowned with the pen as the sword. But there is a line, a single line, in the works of Lee which would hand him over to immortality, though he had never written another. 'First in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his fellow-countrymen,' will last while language lasts. What a sublime eulogium is pronounced in that noble line. So few words, and yet how illustrative are they of the vast and matchless character of Washington! They are words which will descend with the memory of the hero they are meant to honor, to the veneration of remotest posterity, and be graven on colossal statues of the Pater Patriae in some future age.

"The attachment of Lee to Washington was like

that of Hamilton, pure and enthusiastic—like that of the chivalric Laurens, devotional. It was in the praise of his 'hero, his friend and his country's preserver' that the splendid talents of Lee were often elicited, with a force and grandeur of eloquence wholly his own. The fame and memory of his chief was the fondly-cherished passion to which he clung amid the wreck of his fortunes—the hope which gave warmth to his heart when all else around him seemed cold and desolate. But shall the biographer's task be complete, when the faults of his subject are not to be taken into account? Of faults, perhaps the subject of our memoir had many; yet how admirable is the maxim handed down to us from the ancients, 'De mortuis nil, nisi bonum.' Let the faults of Lee be buried in the distant grave—let the turf of oblivion close over the failings of him whose early devotion to liberty, in liberty's battles—whose eloquence in her senates and historical memoirs of her times of trial, shed a lustre on his country in his young days of the Republic; and when Americans of some future date shall search among the records of their early history for the lives of illustrious men who flourished in the age of Washington, high on a brilliant scroll will they find inscribed, Henry Lee, a son of Virginia-patriot, soldier, and historian of the Revolution, and orator and statesman of the Republic."

In 1801, Henry Lee retired permanently from public life, hoping to spend the remainder of his days in the peaceful quiet of a Virginia farm life. "With his congressional career, ended the better days of this highly gifted man. An unhappy rage for speculation caused him to embark upon that treacherous

stream, which gently, and almost imperceptibly at first, but with sure and fearful rapidity at last, hurries its victims to the vortex of destruction. It was, indeed, lamentable to behold the venerable Morris and Lee, patriots, who, in the senates of liberty and on her battlefields, had done the 'State such service,' instead of enjoying a calm and happy evening of life, to be languishing in prison and in exile. Lee, after long struggling with adversity, sought in a foreign land a refuge from his many ills, where, becoming broken in health, he returned home to die. He reached the mansion of Greene, and fortune, relenting her frowns, lit up his few remaining days with a smile. There, amid attentions the most consoling and kindly, surrounded by recollections of his old and loved commander, the most fond and endearing, the worn and wearied spirit of the patriot, statesman, and soldier of liberty, found rest in the grave."

**Gen. Henry Lee's Grave.**

In 1809 Henry Lee wrote his interesting Memoirs of the War in the Southern Department of the United States. Shortly afterward (June, 1812), he was very seriously injured by a mob at Baltimore, while attempting to defend the house of a friend. Later he made a voyage to the West Indies, seeking restoration for his shattered health. On his way home he landed at Cumberland Island, on the coast of Georgia, the home of his old commander and friend, General Greene, where he died on the 25th, of March, 1818, and was buried. A war vessel, happening to be anchored near by, her captain and his crew assisted at his funeral, and paid the last mili-

tary honors to the dead soldier. As has been said: "Fortune seems to have conducted him at the close of his life almost to the tomb of Greene; and his bones may now repose by the side of those of his beloved chief; friends in war, united in death, and partners in a never-dying fame."

As stated by Mr. Custis, Henry Lee was always an ardent admirer of Washington, and never lost an opportunity of expressing his veneration for that great man. In his last illness "a surgical operation was proposed, as offering some hope of prolonging his life; but he replied that the eminent surgeon to whose skill and care, during his sojourn in the West Indies, he was so much indebted, had disapproved a resort to the proposed operation. The surgeon in attendance still urging it, the patient put an end to the discussion by saying: 'My dear sir, were the great Washington alive and here, and joining you in advocating it, I would still resist.' "

Mr. Irving has said that Henry Lee was always a favorite with Washington, and was very often favorably noticed by him. And Lee, on his part, seems to have looked up to Washington rather as a friend or older brother, than as his military chief. In his letters he appears to have asked for advice upon any private business or public topic that interested him, and to have expressed his feelings and opinions on current affairs with much freedom. Mr. Irving says further, "Colonel Henry Lee, who used to be a favored guest at Mount Vernon, does not seem to have been much under the influence of that 'reverential awe,' which Washington is said to have inspired: if we may judge from the following anecdote. Washington one day at a table mentioned his

being in want of carriage horses, and asked Lee if he knew where he could get a pair.

" 'I have a fine, pair, general,' replied Lee, 'but you cannot get them.'

" 'Why not?'

" 'Because you will never pay more than half price for anything; and I must have full price for my horses.'

"The bantering reply set Mrs. Washington laughing, and her parrot, perched beside her, joined in the laugh. The general took this familiar assault upon his dignity in great good part. 'Ah, Lee, you are a funny fellow,' said he; 'see, that bird is laughing at you.' "

The following letter of sympathy from General Washington to Henry Lee, was evidently written in response to the news of the death of his (first) wife and son; indeed, on the original were endorsed the words by Lee himself, "the deaths of my wife and son."

"New York, August 27th, 1790.

My dear Sir:—I have been duly favored with the receipt of your obliging letter dated the 12th of June last. I am also indebted to you for a long letter written to me in the course of last year and should have had the pleasure sooner to express my acknowledgements for the tender interest you take on account of my health and administration, but such is the multiplicity of my avocations, and so great the pressure of public business as to leave me no leisure for the agreeable duty of answering private letters from my friends—and although I shall at all time be happy to hear from them, yet I shall be but an un-

profitable correspondent, as it will not be in my power to make those returns, which under other circumstances I should have real pleasure in doing.

It is unnecessary to assure you of the interest I take in whatever nearly concerns you. I, therefore, very sincerely condole with you on your late, and great loss; but as the ways of Providence are as inscrutable as just, it becomes the children of it to submit with resignation and fortitude to its decrees as far as the feelings of humanity will allow, and your good sense will, I am persuaded, enable you to do this. Mrs. Washington joins me in these sentiments and with great esteem and regard, I am, my dear sir," etc.

Henry Lee was twice married; first in the spring of 1782, to his cousin Matilda, daughter of Philip Ludwell and Elizabeth (Steptoe) Lee, of Stratford: she died about May, 1790, having had four children:

I—Nathaniel Green 6, born at Stratford, about 1784, and died in infancy.

II—Philip Ludwell 6, born at Stratford about 1785, died in 1792, aged seven years.

III—Lucy Grymes 6, born at Stratford 1786, married Bernard Moore Carter in 1803, died in 1860.

IV—Henry 6. See page 191.

After his first wife's death, Henry Lee had seriously considered the idea of going to France, where, as he wrote Washington when consulting him upon the step, a major-general's commission awaited him. Washington would give no direct advice, but discouraged the idea, saying he himself would not think of taking such a step. "Because it would appear a boundless ocean I was about to embark on, from whence no land is seen. . . . .Those in whose hands

the government (of France) is intrusted are ready to tear each other to pieces, and will more than probably prove the worst foes the country has." This project was given up, whether through the influence of Washington or from the objection of Mr. Carter, or both is not known. Mr. Carter would not consent to a union with his daughter until assured that the French project was abandoned. He wrote, under the 20th, of May 1793: "The only objection we ever had to your connection with our beloved daughter is now done away. You have declared upon your honor that you have relinquished all thoughts of going to France, and we rest satisfied with that assurance. As we certainly know that you have obtained her consent, you shall have that of her parents most cordially, to be joined together in the holy bonds of matrimony, whenever she pleases; and as it is determined on, by the approbation and sincere affection of all friends, as well as of all the parties immediately concerned, we think the sooner it takes place the better."

On hearing of this marriage, Washington writes to Lee: ".....As we are told that you have exchanged the rugged and dangerous fields of Mars for the soft and pleasurable bed of Venus, I do in this, as I shall in everything you may pursue like unto it, good and laudable, wish you all imaginable success and happiness."

Henry Lee married, secondly, on June 18th, 1793, Anne Hill, daughter of Charles Carter, of "Shirley," and Anne Butler Moore, his second wife; Mrs. Lee was born in 1773, and died in 1829; they had six children, the record of their ages given here is from Mrs. Lee's family Bible.

V—Algernon Sidney 6, born at Stratford, April 2, 1795, died August 9, 1796.

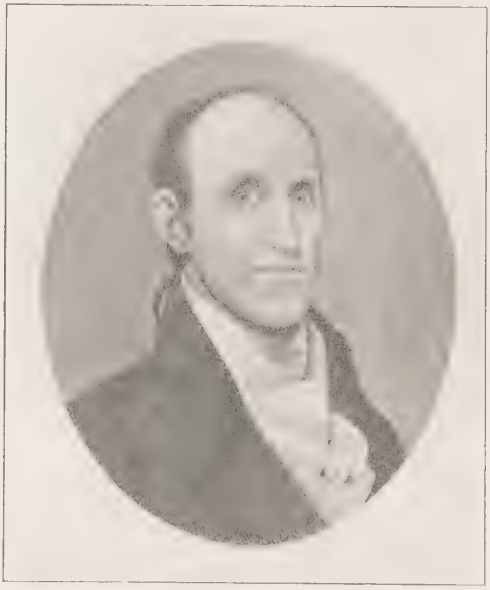
VI—Charles Carter 6. See page 193.

VII—Anne Kinloch 6, born at Stratford, June 19, 1800. Married 1825, Judge Wm. Louis Marshall, died at Baltimore, February 20, 1864.

VIII—Sydney Smith 6. See page 197.

IX—Robt. Edward 6. See page 204.

X—Catherine Mildred 6, born at Alexandria, February 27, 1811, married 1831, Edward Vernon Childe, died at Paris, France, 1856.



**Charles Lee.**

Charles 5, second son of Henry 4, (Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born 1758, died June 24, 1815, at

his home near Warrenton, Faquier County. He was educated at Princeton College, where he graduated a B. A., in 1775 and M. A., in 1778. In 1777, he was Naval officer of "South Potomac," which office he held until it was abolished in 1789.

President Washington wrote Richard Henry Lee, August 2, 1789:—"Mr. Charles Lee will certainly be brought forward as collector of the Port of Alexandria." He studied law in Philadelphia, under Jared Ingersol. On December 10, 1795, The President appointed him Atty. General, which office he held under John Adams and until the inauguration of Thomas Jefferson, in 1801.

Washington was an unusually good judge of men, and President Adams confirmed his choice, not only by continuing Mr. Lee as Atty. General through his administration, but on February 18th, 1801, sent his name to the U. S. Senate as one of the 16 new Circuit Judges, required by the reduction of the U. S. Supreme Court to 5 judges in 1801. These new judges were confirmed, March 3rd, 1801, just before midnight, hence they were called the Midnight Judges. The Act of Congress creating them was repealed, April 8th, 1802, without imputing any fault on the part of the judges.

It is said that President Adams offered Mr. Lee the appointment of Chief Justice to succeed Oliver Ellsworth, but it was declined. Judge Lee retired to his home, and practiced law in the Courts of Virginia, and at Washington, until his death, (Hayden, Va., Genealogies, 541).

Charles Lee was one of the lawyers for the defense of Aaron Burr in his famous trial for treason. He was twice married.

**Anne Lee.**

By his first wife, Anne, daughter of Richard Henry Lee, he had:

I—Anne Lucinda 6, born at Chantilly, 1790, and married General Walter Jones.

II—A son 6, born 1791, and lived about two months.

III—Richard Henry 6, born 1793, at Alexandria, died a month later.

IV—Chas. Henry 6, born 1794, at Alexandria.

V—Wm. Arthur 6, born 1796, at Alexandria.

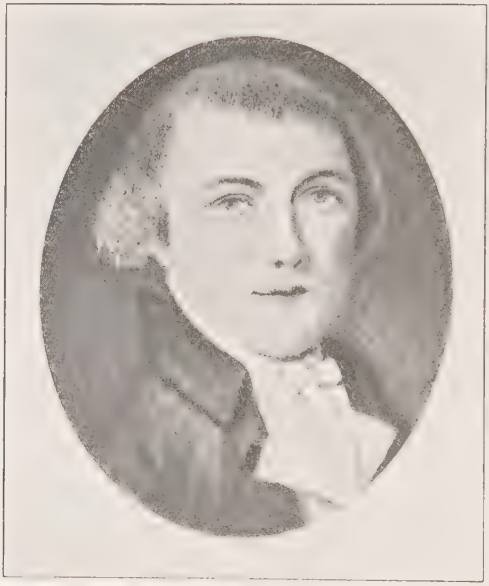
VI—Alfred 6, born 1799, at Alexandria, died unmarried in Fairfax County in 1865.

By his second wife Mrs. Margaret C. (Scott) Peyton, he had:

VII—Robert Eden 6, was born at "Gordansdale," Fauquier Co., September 7, 1810, and was killed at Warrenton, July 24, 1843. He married Margaret Gorden Scott and left no issue.

VIII—Elizabeth Gorden 6, born at Alexandria, May 17, 1813, married November 25, 1835, the Rev. Abraham David Pollock, D. D. They had six children, the oldest Thomas G. Pollock, was a captain in the C. S. A. and killed in Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg, July 3d, 1863.

IX—Alexander 6, born near Warrenton, April 18, 1815, and died in infancy.



**Richard Bland Lee.**

Richard Bland 5, third son of Henry 4, (Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Leesylvania, January 20, 1861, died March 12, 1827. He was in the Virginia Assembly as early as 1784, a member of Congress 1789 to 1795, and 1825 to 1827. In a letter to the Mayor of Washington, dated October 8, 1824, he said:

I was presented to Gen. Lafayette today and delivered the message of the committee, together with a copy of your proposed address. He received with great politeness and cordiality my communication, and informed me that he had sent by Mr. Secretary Adams, his reply to the invitation of the city which

had been delivered to him at Boston—in which I understood him to say that he had noted that he would be on Monday evening at the house of a friend near Bladensburg, whom I understood to be Mr. Calvert. On Monday evening and Tuesday morning he would be ready to conform to my arrangements, which might be communicated to him at that time. I collected from him that Virginia would send a steamboat to conduct him from Alexandria or Mount Vernon to Yorktown, and his probable stay in Washington would be three or four days.

I have in vain endeavored to find Mr. French. I have visited every principal tavern and can hear nothing of him. I presume he is doing his duty.

"The Philadelphians have acknowledged that the military exhibition yesterday and the illumination last night surpassed theirs. I did not see the first, but the last exceeded anything which I had ever seen. The devices and transparencies were most appropriate and elegant. The illumination seemed to throw in a shade the brightness of the moon. Ingenuity seems to have been exhausted in emblems and gratitude in respect to Washington, Franklin, Lafayette, Adams, Jefferson, Madison, Hamilton, Jay, and Monroe—nor were De Kalb, Steuben, and Rochambeau forgotten. I shall return to-morrow. This city is filled with deputations from Alexandria and various parts of Virginia and Maryland."

He married Elizabeth Collins and had:

I—Mary Ann 6, born May 11th, 1795, died June 21st, 1796.

II—Richard Bland 6. See page 278.

III—Ann Matilda 6, born July 13, 1799, died De-

cember 20, 1880, married Dr. Bailey Washington, Surgeon, U. S. N.

IV—Mary Collins 6, born May 6th, 1801 died February 22, 1805.

V—Cornelia 6, born March 20, 1804, died December 26, 1876, married Dr. Jas. W. F. Macrae.

VI—Zaccheus Collins 6. See page 283.

**Theodoric Lee.**

Theodoric 5, fifth son of Henry 4, (Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born September 3, 1766, died April 10, 1859, at "Eckington," near Washington, D. C. He married Catherine Hite, of Winchester, and had:

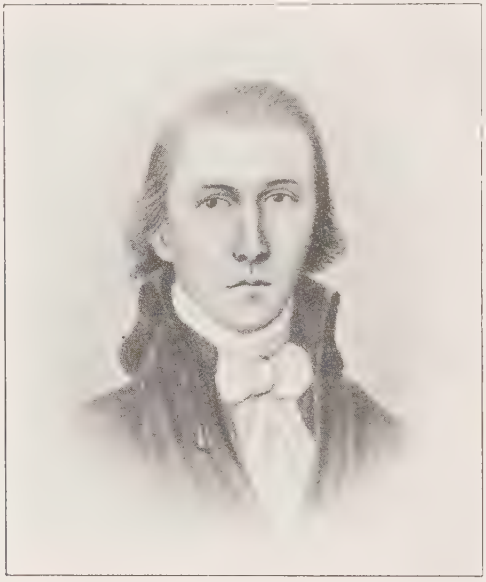
I—Caroline Hite 6, married Samuel P. Walker,

of Baltimore, Md., and had 13 children. She lived to be 86 years old.

II—John Hite 6, born July 30, 1797, died July 1832, at Norfolk, Va., where he was stationed on naval duty. Married, 1825, Elizabeth Prosser, of "White Marsh," Glocester County, Va. They had three children, Theodoric 7, Matilda 7, and John Hite Lee 7.

III—Sarah Juliana Maria 6, married 1813, Joseph Gales, Jr., of Washington, left no issue.

IV—Catherine Hite 6, married Dr. George May, of Washington, D. C., and left two daughters.



**Edmund Jennings Lee.**

Edmund Jennings 5, fifth son of Henry 4, (Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at "Leesylvania," May 20, 1772, died at his home in Alexandria, May 30, 1843. About 1796, he married Sarah, daughter of Richard Henry Lee, of Chantilly, and had:

I—Edmunds Jennings 6. See page 284.

II—Anne Harriette 6, born March 6, 1799, died September 10, 1863, married November 2, 1820, John Lloyd, Esq., of Alexandria, and had six children.

III—Sarah 6, born about 1801, died unmarried, April 14, 1879.

IV—William Fitzhugh 6, born May 7, 1804, at Alexandria, and died there May 19, 1837, married

October 27, 1827, Mary Catherine, daughter of William Chilton, Esq., of Loudoun County. He left two children, William Fitzhugh, who was killed at the first battle of Manassas, and Mary Morrison, who married Rev. Robert Allen Castleman, of Clark County.

V—Hannah 6, born about 1806 and died May 9, 1872, at Lewis, Del. Married May 5, 1840, Rev. Kinsey Johns Stewart, D. D., and had six children.

VI—Cassius Francis 6. See page 288.

VII—Susan Meade 6, born March 26, 1814, and died February 15, 1815.

VIII—Charles Henry 6, born at Alexandria, Oct. 20, 1818. He married November 7, 1844, Elizabeth A. Dunbar, and had one daughter.

IX—Richard Henry 6, born at Alexandria. Just prior to the outbreak of the Civil War, he had been chosen commonwealth's attorney for that county, and was holding this position when he entered the army. He was made Lieutenant in "Botts' Grays," a company of the 2d Virginia Regiment, Stonewall Brigade. During the Valley campaign under General Jackson, while bearing the colors of his regiment, the color-bearer having been shot, he received a disabling wound. Upon the organization of the military court he was appointed by President Davis President of the Military Court, of the 2d Army Corps, which position he held until the close of the war. Before this, he had been twice taken prisoner, and was once a prisoner at Johnson's Island; the second time he was fortunate enough to effect his escape.

Since the war Mr. Lee has practiced his profession in Clarke and Loudoun Counties, with his residence

near Millwood, in the former county. He was elected by the State Legislature as Judge for Clarke County.

Mr. Lee was selected as the proper representative of his grandfather, Richard Henry Lee, to read the Declaration of Independence at the old State House, Philadelphia, July 4th, 1876.

June 1848 he married Evelyn Byrd Page, of "Pagebrook," Clarke County, and had five children.

Mary Page Lee 7, William Byrd Lee 7, Richard Henry Lee 7, Alice Atkinson Lee 7, Charles Henry Lee 7 and Evelyn Byrd Lee 7.

**Samuel Phillips Lee.**

SAMUEL Phillips 6, second child of Francis Lightfoot 5, (Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at "Sully," Fairfax County, February 13, 1812. Entering the Navy at an early age, he spent almost his entire life in the service of his country; a brief resume can only be given here:

He was appointed Midshipman from Virginia, November 22, 1825; ordered to sloop-of-war "Hornet," West India Station, February 7, 1827; ordered to line-of-battle-ship, "Delaware," and transferred to the Mediterranean as Captain's Aid to frigate "Java" August 24, 1827; ordered to Norfolk School, Vir-

giana, October 16, 1830. Promoted to Past-Midshipman, June 4, 1831, and ordered to Navy Yard, Boston, July 28, 1831. Ordered to frigate "Brandywine," Pacific Squadron, as Second Master, and transferred to the "Vincennes" as Acting Lieutenant and additional navigator, April 17, 1834. Promoted to Lieutenant, February 9, 1837; ordered to Exploring Expedition, July 19, 1837; ordered to West India Squadron, December 13, 1839; ordered to Receiving Ship, at Alexandria, Virginia, December 8, 1841; ordered to Coast Survey schooner "Vanderbuilt," August 4, 1844; ordered to Navy Yard, Pensacola, Florida, November 11, 1844; ordered to command Coast Survey schooner, "Nautalus," March 9, 1846; ordered to command Coast Survey brig, "Washington," December 29, 1846, on his own application to participate in the Mexican War; was present at the capture of Tobasco, and subsequently transferred to the command of the Coast Survey steamer, "Legare." He always considered coast-survey duty as one of the best schools of naval practice, and advocated its return to the administration of the Navy Department. Ordered to command the brig, "Dolphin" on special service, to make deep sea soundings, try currents, search for vigias, etc. (report published by Congress, 1854), July 3, 1851. Detached and ordered to duty on wind and current charts, July 7, 1852. Promoted to Commander, September 14, 1855. Ordered as member of Examining Board, March 12, 1858; ordered to command sloop-of-war, "Vandalia," with orders to the East Indies, November 1, 1860. When he learned, at the Cape of Good Hope, of the rebellion, assuming the risk of acting against orders, he brought his ship back and was assigned to the blockade off

Charleston, South Carolina, where he succeeded in maintaining it with the "Vandalia," a sailing vessel, when her steam consort was blown off.

Before the return of the consort, a British steam-gunboat ventured in to inspect the blockade, and finding it, under such conditions of weather, actual and close, foreign scrutiny was terminated. Ordered to command the sloop-of-war "Oneida," January 20, 1862, and to report to Admiral Farragut. In the expedition against New Orleans, he commanded the advance division below the forts, Jackson and St. Philip. In the gunboat actions, when the gunboats took part in the bombardment, to draw the fire from the bomb-vessels, the "Oneida" was at one time engaged alone with both forts. In the action of the passage of the forts, the "Oneida" was one of the three vessels first to encounter the enemy's fleet, and she relieved the "Varuna" by driving off the two rams which had rammed her, forcing their burning, and captured the commander of the "Governor Moore." The "Oneida" participated in the capture of the Chalmette batteries below New Orleans; became advance guard above the city. For a time Lee commanded the advance division below Vicksburg and participated in both the passages of the Vicksburg batteries, the "Oneida" being the second in line on each occasion. Promoted to Captain, July 16, 1862. Appointed to Acting Rear-Admiral, September 2, 1862, and ordered to the command of the North Atlantic Blockading Squadron. Was engaged in blockading the coasts of Virginia and North Carolina, and zealously co-operating with the armies in the defense of Norfolk, Newbern, and Washington, fighting with their iron-clads and heavy fortifica-

tions in Trent's Reach, and their field-batteries along Grant's line of communication on the James River, always securely held while Admiral Lee was in command, for two years he fulfilled the arduous duties of his command, perfecting and maintaining a vast blockade.

"The dangerous navigation of the North Carolina coast, owing to the long shoals of Cape Fear, between the two ports into Wilmington; the nearness of the British ports of Bermuda and Nassau, from which steamers of excellent form and great speed, of low build and gray color, ran in at night; the immense profits tempting the risks, made the blockade an undertaking of the greatest difficulty, and yet the Confederacy was, in effect, isolated, by several girdles of cruisers (a system originated by Rear Admiral Lee), from foreign recruits, supplies, and munitions of war. Of the total number of blockade-running steamers captured or destroyed by this squadron, sixty-five in all, fifty-four were captured or destroyed by the fleet under Admiral Lee's command. Besides blockading, the main duty of the squadron, it, independently, or in co-operation with the army, was engaged in ninety-one actions and expeditions during this period. The efficiency and importance of this service, together with the small loss of shipwreck on so dangerous a coast, have excited the approving comment of foreign military observers. Detached and ordered to command the Mississippi Squadron, October 21st, 1864. The efficiency of this squadron was maintained, notwithstanding the withdrawal of a large number of experienced officers. Lee's movement up the Cumberland to support General Thomas was in co-operation

with the army against the apprehended crossing of the river by Hood and his marching to the Ohio. The flag-ship was stopped at Clarksville by the low stage of water, which was still falling on Harpeth Shoals; the river rising barely enough in time to allow Fitch to move the gunboats at Nashville and participate in the defeat of Hood, but not enough to make Harpeth Shoals passable three days later.

Army communication were kept open and operations supported with vigor and effect, and the lower Mississippi was vigilantly guarded against the intervention of the trans-Mississippi Confederate forces. The operation of the squadron on the Tennessee River prevented Hood on his retreat from crossing where the Tennessee was navigable, forcing him to cross six miles above the head of navigation on Muscle Shoals, the rocky barrier that effectually closed navigation for thirty miles above the close piers of Florence Bridge, where he had previously crossed. Detached from the Mississippi Squadron, August 14, 1865, which after much arduous labor, had been disbanded, vessels laid up or sent to other squadrons, officers and men discharged or transferred. Promoted to Commodore, July 25, 1866; ordered as President of Examining Board, to meet at Philadelphia, March 6, 1868; ordered as President of Examining Board, April 16, 1868; ordered as President of Court Martial at New York, May 29, 1868; ordered as President of Board of Examiners, February 13, 1869; ordered as member of Board to examine the Atlantic Navy Yards and was author of the report to impove them, March 10, 1869; ordered in charge of Signal Service, Washington, D. C., October 13, 1869. Promoted Rear-Admiral, April 22, 1870;

ordered to special duty at Navy Department, June 27, 1870; ordered to command North Atlantic Squadron, August 9, 1870; detached, August 15, 1872. Retired February 13, 1873;" (Hammersly, Records of Living Officers of the U. S. Navy and Marine Corps. 1890). Died at Silver Springs, Md., June 7th, 1897 and is buried at Arlington.

**Elizabeth (Blair) Lee.**

Admiral Lee was married April 27, 1843, to Elizabeth, daughter of Francis Preston Blair, they had but one child.

I—Blair Lee 7. See Page 295.

**John Fitzgerald Lee.**

John Fitzgerald Lee 6, third child of Francis Lightfot 5, (Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Sully, Fairfax County, May 5th, 1813, died, St. Louis, June 17, 1884.

John Fitzgerald Lee entered West Point as a cadet on July 1st, 1830, and graduated in 1834; was appointed brevet 2nd. Lieutenant 1st artillery, July 1st 1834; 2nd. lieutenant, July 23rd, 1835; served in Florida against the Seminole Indians, as captain in the regiment of mounted Creek volunteers; made 1st lieutenant light artillery, December 17th, 1836; a brevet captain, January 27th, 1837, "for gallantry and good conduct in the war against the Florida

Indians;" 1st lieutenant of ordinance, July 9th, 1838; served as ordinance officer at Little Rock, 1838-40; at Washington, 1841-42; commanded the arsenal at Fortress Monroe, 1846-47, the Washington arsenal 1847-48, and later at St. Louis; was made captain of ordinance, March 3d, 1847; appointed Judge Advocate of the Army with headquarters at Washington, 1849-62, with brevet rank of major of staff.

He studied law and when the office of Judge Advocate of the Army was created he was appointed to that position. When the Civil War broke out his sympathies and affection went with the South, though his judgment convinced him of the hopelessness of this contest against the North, so in 1862 he retired to the "Lodge" his estate in Prince George County, Maryland.

In 1862 Major Lee was chosen a member of the Maryland Constitutional Convention and a member of the State Senate at the next Assembly. At his death the following appeared in a St. Louis paper:

"The grave will close today over the remains of this gifted man. He was little known in St. Louis, where he died, but for nearly fifty years he has been a prominent member of society in Washington City, and his name is a household word with all other officers of the United States Army.

"He was born May 5th, 1813. He was a grandson of Richard Henry Lee, the colleague and almost the equal in eloquence of Patrick Henry in the Congress of 1876. He was admitted into the United States Military Academy as a cadet from Virginia in 1830, and graduated with distinguished honor in 1834. Commissioned a lieutenant of artillery, he

was afterwards attached to the ordinance corps, and stationed at various fortresses and arsenals, according to the exigencies of the service, until 1849. During this interval he served one campaign in Florida, in the Seminole War.

"When the Civil war broke out, Major Lee was placed in a painful and delicate situation. He condemned secession unreservedly, both as a political heresy and a blunder in statesmanship; but he could not make up his mind to bear arms against his friends and relatives in Virginia. While he disapproved of their views and their conduct, he could not divest himself of some sympathy for their persons. He was, therefore, entirely out of harmony with those who regarded any such sentiments as a crime, and by the Act of July 17th, 1862, he was legislated out of office. He therefore, retired from the army and has since resided in Washington City, or its neighborhood. He had a farm in Prince George's County, Md., and there he passed all but the winter months of each year. Those he spent in Washington City with his family. He married in 1845, Miss Hill, a lady of Prince George's County, who survives him, and of this marriage there were five children, a daughter and four sons, who also survive. Of these sons the three eldest, William H. Lee, Arthur Lee, and John F. Lee, Jr., are, and have long been well known and respected citizens of St. Louis.

"Major Lee was a man of unusual capacity, improved by extensive and well-directed reading. His vivacity, wit, and cheerfulness rendered him a delightful companion, and these qualities, with his elevated and generous spirit, made him a cherished

friend to all who had the privilege of friendship with him. Seldom is a man of equal ability to be seen more entirely free from ambition. He was a man of most scrupulous integrity. He loved his family and his friends and found his happiness in their service and society; but from all the weakness of vanity he seems to have been altogether free. Like many who have been in military life until past middle age, he considered himself unfit for civil pursuits when he left the army. Only by an irksome effort did he imagine that he could succeed in the attempt to form new habits of life, and as in one sense no necessity existed for over coming his aversion to these new methods the effort was not made.

"His departure makes in his family circle a void, which is unspeakable an irreparable. To his few surviving contemporaries, while it renders their remaining days more dreary, it is at the same time a warning that he has only by a brief interval preceded them to the silent shore. One who has for more than fifty years known and loved him offers this tribute to his memory."

St. Louis, June 18, 1884.

April 29, 1845, he married Eleanor Ann Hill, of Prince George County, Md., a lineal descendant of Clement Hill, the first Surveyor General of the Province of Maryland, under Lord Baltimore.

And by her he had five children.

I—William Hill 7, born, Washington, D. C., March 7, 1846. Is President of the Merchant's-Laclede Bank of St. Louis, Mo., where he resides. Married, November 3, 1869, Julia Turner, daughter of Major Henry S. Turner, of Marengo, King George County, Va., and by her had seven children.

1st—Eleanor Hill 8, born, St. Louis, October 6, 1870, died September 18, 1874.

2nd—Henry Turner 8, born in St. Louis, June 27, 1872, and is now living near Columbia, Boone County, Md., married Katherine De Hart Patterson and has three children, viz., Wilson Turner 9, born February 26, 1901, Julia Hunt 9, born April 26, 1903 and Phebe McDonald 9, born May 14, 1910.

3rd—Julia Hunt 8, born St. Louis, September 22. 1874, died September 27, 1877.

4th—Janet Fitzgerald 8, born St. Louis, January 16, 1877. married Captain Edward Carpenter, U. S. Army and has two children.

5th—William Hill, Jr. 8, born St. Louis, September 26, 1879, died January 8th, 1889.

6th—Margaret Loretta 8, born St. Louis, January 16th, 1883, unmarried.

7th—Marianna 8, born St. Louis, June 25, 1884. married Charles Martin Polk, of Arkansas and have two children.

II—Arthur 7, born Fortress Monroe, Va., June 1, 1847, died unmarried, St. Louis, Mo., April 12, 1899. Graduated at Georgetown College in 1867 and finished his legal education at the University of Virgina 1869-70. For two years he was secretary to his Uncle, Admiral Samuel Phillips Lee, then in command of the North Atlantic Squadron. He was admitted to the practice of law in Maryland and soon after settled in St. Louis and formed a partnership with his brother, John F. Lee.

Admirably grounded in the principles of law, his standing in the profession was a most enviable one and he was one of the best known men in St. Louis His prominence was due largely to the depth of his

learning. He was accounted an authority on the best books, and served for years on the Public Library Board.

III—John Fitzgerald 7, born June 29, 1848, is now practicing law in St. Louis, Mo.

IV—Anne 7, born April 24, 1851. Married Henry Harrison, of Leesburg, Va., January 8, 1885.

V—Francis Phillips 7, born May 8, 1856, is living unmarried in St. Louis, Mo.

### George Lee.

George 6, third child of George 5, (Thomas Ludwell 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born about 1796, died at Leesburg, 1858, married Sarah Moore Henderson and had a very large family it is said twenty-three children, of these however nothing is known except that a daughter Orra 7, married John M. Orr and Evelyn Byrd 7, married Thomas Delaney. Maria and Elizabeth Claggett died unmarried. Archibald Henderson 7, died unmarried, and George 7, born at Leesburg May 3, 1831, died at Brooklyn, N. Y., April 14th, 1892. Married June 27th 1860, Laura Francis Orr, and had at least four children, Hugh Douglass 8, Elanor Orr 8, Asa Rogers 8, and Arthur 8.

Hugh Douglas Lee 8, is the representative in the male line of Thomas Lee, of Stratford.

### Henry Lee.

Henry 6, fourth child of Henry 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), was born at "Stratford," Westmoreland County, Va., May 28th, 1787, died at Paris, France, January 30th, 1837.

He graduated at William and Mary College in 1808; was appointed Major of the 36th Regiment by President Madison, April 8th, 1813; served on the Canadian frontier on the staff of General James Wilkinson, and later on that of General George Izard. "On his return from Canada, he met in New York, Lord Jeffrey, the 'Edinburgh' reviewer, and both men were much sought after in society on account of their brilliant conversational powers." Major Lee was an ardent and influential supporter of General Jackson in his canvass for the Presidency, in whose behalf he wrote several essays, and was rewarded with the appointment of Consul to Algiers. But, as his appointment was rejected by the Senate, Major Lee left Algiers after a short residence and travelled through Italy on his way to Paris. While on his trip he met "Madam Mere," the mother of Napoleon, for whom he entertained an extravagant admiration, as shown in the following note to Madam Bonepart:

"Rome, April 2nd, 1830.

As I feel the most profound respect for Madam, the mother of Napoleon, that one being can entertain for another, I beg leave to offer for her acceptance the enclosed autograph letter from General Washington to my father, considering this precious memorial of the American hero and patriot well bestowed in being placed in the hands of a lady, great in her

own character and illustrious in her offspring; especially in having given birth to the greatest warrior and the most generous conqueror and friend that ever existed."

March 1817, Major Lee married Anne R., daughter of Daniel McCarty, of Westmoreland County, and had one child, Margaret Lee 7, who was accidently killed when about ten years of age, by falling down the high stone steps of the "Stratford" mansion. At least the following is the story told by Eleanor Griffith Fairfax, of Westmoreland County.

"Some years ago Aunt Miny, an old colored woman, told me the sad story of the death of Major Henry Lee's only daughter, a niece of General R. E. Lee, which story was corroborated by Dr. Stuart, he having frequently heard his Aunt, (Mrs. Storke, a sister of Henry Lee's wife), speak of the death of her sister's child, little Margaret, aged ten, who during a sleet while playing around the front hall door, fell down these stone steps and was killed."

Besides his review of Jefferson's writings, Major Lee began, while residing at Paris, a history of Napoleon's Italian campaign, but completed only one volume, which was published after his death.

**Charles Carter Lee.**

Charles Carter 6, sixth child of Henry 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), was born at Stratford, November 1798, died March 21, 1871, and was buried at his home, "Windsor Forest," in Powhatan County. He graduated from Harvard in 1819, second in his class. He possessed a mind of a very superior order, had a thorough classical education, a most retentive memory, and a keen wit. Being an omniverous reader, a brilliant conversationalist, his society was most entertaining, and in consequence he was greatly sought after at all social gatherings. He was a lawyer by profession and practiced first at Washington City, then in Floyd County, Va., next in

Mississippi, where he resided for several years; later he removed to Hardy County, and finally settled in Powhatan. Some verses of his, known as the Virginia Georgics, written for the "Hole and Corner Club of Powhatan," were published in the club in 1858.

May 13, 1847, he married Lucy Penn, daughter of George Taylor, of "Horn Quarter," King William County, and of the same family as President Taylor. They had the following children:

I—Geo. Taylor 7, born Richmond, Va., March 8th, 1848, and lived with his parents at "Brookfield," near Richmond, until about seven years old, when his parents moved to "Windsor Forest," Powhatan County. He entered the Virginia Military Institute when sixteen years of age and served with the cadets until the close of the war; part of the time in Lexington, part in Richmond and part in the field. After the war, he entered Washington & Lee University and graduated a B. L., and has been practicing law in Johnson City, Tenn., (where he now lives), since 1891.

May 16, 1888, he married Mrs. Ella Marion (Goodman) Fletcher, of Arkansas, and by her had the following children:

(1) Charles Carter 8, born at Lanoke, Ark., April 9, 1889, and lives at Johnson City, Tenn.

(2) Lucy Randolph 8, born at Johnson City, Tenn., September 19, 1893, and lives there with her parents.

(3) Geo. Taylor 8, born at Johnson City, Tenn., December 26, 1895, and lives there with his parents.

II—Henry 7, born Richmond, Virginia, July 9,

1849, died in Macon, Georgia, May 13, 1901, and is buried there. Married July 19, 1888, Lillian Elizabeth Worlen, who is still living and resides in Moultrie, Ga. They had four children.

(1) Charles Carter Lee 8, born Roanoke, Va., April 8, 1889, and died at Roanoke, May 8, 1889, and is buried there.

(2) Robert Henry Lee, born in Winston-Salem, N. C., September 3, 1890, and is now a cadet at West Point, N. Y.

(3) Lillian Virginia Lee, born at Winston-Salem, N. C., December 26, 1893, died at same place, September 11, 1903, and is buried there.

(4) Soule Alice Lee, born at Charlotte, N. C., October 1, 1900, and resides with her mother.

III—Robert Randolph 7, born Richmond, Va., May 22, 1853, married February 4, 1886, Alice Wilkerson, and had by her four children; Wm. Carter 8, born March 14, 1891 and Robert Randolph 8, born September 10, 1892; Alice 8, born September 10, 1895; Mildred Carter, born April 2nd 1899, he resides at Fine Creek Mills, Va.

IV—Wm. Carter 7, born September 8, 1852, died unmarried in a railroad accident, June 21, 1882.

V—Mildred 7, born November 20, 1857, married Dr. John Taylor Francis, February 4, 1888.

VI—Catherine Francis 7, born August 27, 1865, married Dr. John Guerrant, of Franklin County, July 10, 1892.

VII—John Penn 7, was born in Powhatan County, September 11th, 1867, at "Windsor." Went to the county public school and then to Washington & Lee University, took first an academic course, and then law, graduating in law in 1888. At the age of

twenty-one, commenced practicing law at Rocky Mount, Va., where he now resides. Was appointed judge of the County Court of Franklin County about 1898, and remained on the bench until that court was abolished by the late Constitution. Was elected a member of the House of Delegates of the State of Virginia from Franklin County for the session of 1910, and served during that session. Married, December 2, 1896, Isabella Gilmer Walker, of Lynchburg, Va., and by her had seven children, five of whom are living:

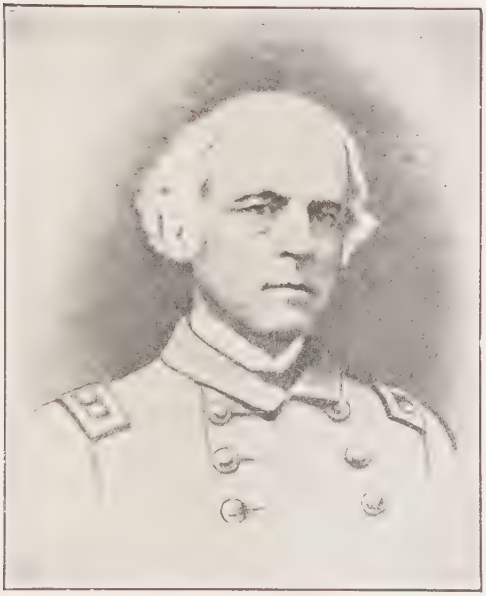
(1) Catherine Dabney Walker 8, born at Rocky Mount, Va., September 3, 1897.

(2) Richard 8, born at Rocky Mount, Va., June 14, 1899.

(3) Chiswell Dabney, born at Rocky Mount, Va., June 14, 1902.

(4) Charles Carter 8, born at Rocky Mount, Va., Jaunary 28th, 1906.

(5) Henry 8, born at Rocky Mount, Va., June 24, 1907.



**Sydney Smith Lee.**

Sydney Smith 6, Eighth child of Henry 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), was born September 2, 1802, at Camden, New Jersey, where his mother happened to be visiting a friend; he died July 22, 1869. Upon graduating at the Naval Academy, he was appointed a midsipman, December 30th, 1820; promoted lieutenant, May 17th, 1828; a commander, June 4th, 1850, and resigned, April 28th, 1861, to enter the service of the Confederate States.

A daughter of General Robert E. Lee has thus written of him:

"No one who ever saw him can forget his beautiful face, charming personality, and grace of manner,

which, joined to a nobility of character and goodness of heart, attracted all who came in contact with him, and made him the most generally beloved and popular of men. This was especially so with regard to women, to whom his conduct was that of a preux chevalier, the most chivalric and courteous; and, having no daughters of his own, he turned with the tenderest affection to the daughters of his brother Robert. His public service of more than thirty years in the navy of the United States is well known. He entered it as a boy of fifteen, and faithfully served his country by land and sea in many climates and on many oceans. He was in Japan with Commodore Perry, commanding his flagship, when that inaccessible country was practically opened to the commerce of the world. He was commandant of the Naval Academy at Annapolis, and afterwards in command of the navy yard at Philadelphia. When the war of secession began he was stationed at Washington, but when Virginia seceded he did not hesitate to abandon the comforts and security of the present and ambitions of the future, and cast his lot with his native State in a war in which, from the very nature of things, there could be but little hope for a naval officer. Uninfluenced, then by hope of either fame or fortune, he sadly parted with the friends and comrades of a lifetime, including General Scott, who had been likewise devoted to him as he was to his brother, and for four years served the Southern Confederacy with the same ardor and energy and unselfishness that he had previously given to the whole country. When the end came he accepted the situation with characteristic resignation and fortitude."

During the Mexican War, Sydney Smith met his

brother, Robert, at Vera Cruz; in a letter home, the soldier told of his work in placing a battery in position, and added: "The first day this battery opened, Smith served one of the guns. I had constructed the battery, and was there to direct its fire. No matter where I turned, my eyes reverted to him, and I stood by his gun whenever I was not wanted elsewhere. Oh! I felt awfully, and am at loss what I should have done, had he been cut down before me. I thank God that he was saved. He preserved his usual cheerfullness, and I could see his white teeth through all the smoke and din of the fire. I had placed three 32 and three 68-pound guns in position.....Their fire was terriffic, and the shells thrown from our battery were constant and regular discharges, so beautiful in their flight and so destructive in their fall. It was awful! My heart bled for the inhabitants. The soldiers I did not care so much for, but it was terrible to think of the women and children... I heard from Smith today; he is quite well, and recovered from his fatigue."

In 1834, he married Anna Maria, daughter of Hon. John Mason, of "Clermont," Fairfax County, in old Christ Church, Alexandria. They went to Arlington, where the festivities were continued. Lieutenant Robert Lee and his friends took part in this old Virginia frolic. Seven young men were bivouacked in one room at Arlington. Captain Canfield, one of the number, made much fun for the party. In the morning the negro servant made so much noise on the bare floor, bringing wood and making fires, that Canfield called out, "Moses, why not come up on a pony?" At this point Mr. Custis threw wide open the door and called out, "Sleep no more; Macbeth hath

murdered sleep." Every night, before the party retired, punch was bounteously dispensed from a punch-bowl, which had belonged to General Washington. In the bottom of the bowl was a painting of a ship, the hull resting on the bottom, and the mast projecting to the brim. The rule was to drink down to the brim—a rule strictly observed. As this bowl has a history, it may be stated that it was presented to General Washington, by Colonel Fitzhugh, a former aide-de-camp, who afterward left Virginia and settled in the Genesee Valley, in Western New York."

Captain Sydney Smith and Anna Maria (Mason) had seven children.

I—Fitzhugh 7. See page 298.

II—Sidney Smith 7, born at Georgetown, D. C., the 10th of February, 1837; died the 15th of April, 1888. Was in the navy; served on the Confederate cruiser "Shenandoah" under Captain Waddell. He never married.

III—John Mason 7, born at "Cleremont," January 24, 1839, joined the cavalry in 1861, and was wounded on the way to Gettysburg, rose to the rank of Major and was with the army at the surrender at Appomattox, married October 25, Nora Bankhead, of Orange County, and by her had five children.

(1) Nannie Mason 8, born 1877, resides with her father unmarried.

(2) Dorothea Bankhead 8, born 1874, married, February, 1907, I. Linwood Austin, and have two children.

(3) Bessie Winston 8, born 1877, married, October, 1900, C. P. Cardwell and have three children. They reside at Signal Hill, Hanover County, Va.

(4) John Mason 8, born 1878, married, April 19, 1910, Rachel Trimble, of Augusta County, Va.

(5) W. Bankhead 8, born 1882, resides on his farm in Stafford County, Va. Unmarried.

IV—Henry Carter 7, born at "Clermont," January 9th, 1842, married, September 24th, Sally Buchanan, daughter of John Warfield Johnston, who now resides in Richmond, Va. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he joined the "Richmond Howitzers," and later was transferred to the staff of General W. C. Wickham, where he served as Adjutant General. He died in Richmond, Virginia, June 6th, 1889, and is buried at Alexandria, Va. His children were:

(1) Johnston Lee 8, born at Abingdon, Va., April 14th, 1870, died unmarried in Richmond, Va., June 25th, 1909, and is buried at Wythville, Va.

(2) Sydney Smith Lee 8, born at Abingdon, Va., September 20th, 1871, resides in Richmond, unmarried.

(3) William Floyd Lee 8, born at Abingdon, Va., September 5th, 1873, resides in New York City, unmarried.

(4) Ann Mason Lee 8, born at Abingdon, Va., July 10, 1877, resides in Richmond, Va., unmarried.

These children are great neices and nephews to both General Joseph E. Johnston and General Robert E. Lee.

V—Daniel Murray 7, born at Alexandria,Va., July 14, 1843, and at sixteen years of age entered the Virginia Military Institute. While there, he was given an appointment to the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis, Md., to enter June, 1861. In the mean time, Virginia having seceded, he left the V. M. I., in April, for Richmond with the corps cadets to drill

troops at the Fair Grounds, was then sent to Manassas as drill master in Whitings Brigade. After that battle, he was commissioned as midshipman in C. S. Navy, and ordered to Norfolk, Va. Served in the navy until the naval brigade was captured at Sailor's Creek, when he escaped during the confusion and joined the cavalry and was assigned to his brother Fitzhugh's staff with the rank of Captain, where he served until the surrender at Appomattox. Saw service in the army at Manassas and Appomattox, and in the navy was in the following engagements: Hampton Roads, Monitor and Merrimac, Drury's Bluff, Naval attack on Fort Sumpter and Morris Island, the capture of the United States Steamer, Underwriter, capture of Plymouth, N. C. In the trenches around Richmond, with sailors in charge of guns, at Cold Harbor fight, and in the attack on Fort Fisher, N. C.

In June, 1865, he entered the Merchant Marine, at Baltimore, where he remained until 1872, when he settled on his farm, "Highland Home," in Stafford County, Va., where he now resides.

On October 14, 1874, he married Nannie E., daughter of Joseph Burwell Ficklin, and by her had six children.

(1) Daniel Maury, Jr., 8, born at "Anchorage," Stafford County, September 11, 1876. Lives unmarried on his farm at Wide Water, Va.

(2) Joseph Burwell Ficklin 8, born at "Anchorage," Stafford County, Va., December 6, 1877. Unmarried in charge of Mrs. Phoebe Hearst's Ranch, "Blanco Pedro," San Simeon, California.

(3) Edna Corbin 8, born at "Anchorage," Stafford County, Va., September 29, 1879. Unmarried.

(4) Sydney Smith 8, born at "Anchorage," Stafford County, Va., March 13, 1881. Unmarried, 1st lieutenant in U. S. Marine Corps.

(5) Mary Custis 8, born at "Highland Home," Stafford County, Va., April 15, 1884. Unmarried.

(6) Harry Fitzhugh 8, born at "Highland Home," Stafford County, Va., March 21, 1891. Unmarried, is a cadet at V. M. I., Lexington, Va.

VI—Robert Carter 7, born at "Cleremont," November 17th, 1848. Died in Fredericksburg, Va., December 5, 1904, and is buried in the family lot at Alexandria, Va. Was in the confederate service, 1864-5.

VII—Elizabeth Mason 7, born at "Cleremont," February 17th, 1853, and died when seven months old.

**Robert Edward Lee.**

Robert Edward 6, the fourth son of Henry 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), and Ann Hill Carter, his second wife, was born at Stratford, Westmoreland County, the 19th day of January, 1807, and died at his home in Lexington, the 12th of October, 1870. When Robert Lee was about four years old, his father moved with his family to Alexandria, where they lived, first, on Cameron Street near old Christ Church, next on Orinoco Street, and, lastly, in the house on north Washington Street, now used as the parsonage of Christ Church. When only eleven years old, he lost his father, who, prior to his death, had been absent from home for several years,

so Robert Lee was reared almost entirely under the watchful and loving care of his mother. It is said she taught him, from his earliest childhood, to "practice self-denial, and self-control, as well as the strictest economy in all financial concerns," traits which he ever exhibited through life.

Miss Emily V. Mason, in her Popular Life of General Lee, tells this of his loving care of his mother: "This good mother was a great invalid; one of his sisters was delicate, and many years absent in Philadelphia, under the care of physicians. The eldest son, Carter, was at Cambridge, Sydney Smith in the navy, and the other sister too young to be of much aid in household matters. So Robert was the housekeeper, carried the keys, attended to the marketing, managed all the out-door business, and took care of his mother's horses.

"At the hour when other school-boys went to play, he hurried home to order his mother's drive and would there be seen carrying her in his arms to the carriage, and arranging her cushions with the gentleness of an experienced nurse. One of his relatives, who was often the companion of these drives tells us of the exertions he would make on these occasions to entertain and amuse his mother, assuring her, with the gravity of an old man, that unless she was cheerful the drive would not benefit her. When she complained of cold or 'draughts,' he would pull from his pocket a great jack-knife and newspapers, and make her laugh with his efforts to improvise curtains, and shut out the intrusive wind, which whistled through the crevices of the old family coach.

"When he left her to go to the West Point, his

mother was heard to say; 'How can I live without Robert? He is both son and daughter to me.'

"Years after, when he came home from West Point, he found one of the chief actors of his childhood's drama—his mother's old coachman, 'Nat'—ill, and threatened with consumption. He immediately took him to the milder climate of Georgia, nursed him with the tenderness of a son, and secured him the best medical advice. But the spring-time saw the faithful old servant laid in the grave by the hands of his kind young master."

Robert Lee was educated at private schools in Alexandria, Va., and prepared for entrance into the military school at West Point, for from earliest youth he seems to have desired to enter the army. His first teacher was Mr. William B. Leary, an Irishman, who lived to meet his pupil after the war. Next he went to the once famous mathematical school, kept by Benjamin Hallowell; of his school days, Mr. Hallowell has left this memorandum:

"Robert Lee entered my school in Alexandria, Va., in the winter of 1824-25, to study mathematics, preparatory to his going to West Point. He was a most exemplary student in every respect. He was never behind time at his studies, never failed in a single recitation, was perfectly observant of the rules and regulations of the institution; was gentlemanly, unobtrusive, and respectful in all his deportment to teachers and fellow-students. His specialty was finishing up. He imparted a neatness and finish to everything he undertook. One of the branches of mathematics he studied with me was conic sections, in which some of the diagrams were very complicated. He drew the diagrams on a slate, and although

he well knew that the one he was drawing would have to be removed to make room for the next, he drew each one with as much accuracy and finish, lettering and all, as if it were to be engraved and printed. The same traits he exhibited at my school he carried with him to West Point, where I have been told, he never received a mark of demerit, and graduated at the head of his class."

General Lee entered West Point in 1825, and graduated second, (not first, as frequently stated) in his class, in 1829. He received an appointment as second lieutenant in the corps of military engineers; in 1835, he served upon a commission for settling the boundary between Ohio and Michigan; was made first lieutenant in 1836, and captain in 1838. In 1846, he was appointed chief engineer on the staff of General Wool, in Mexico, and the next year was brevetted major for gallantry at the battle of Cerro Gordo, and, for services at Contreras and Churubusco, was brevetted lieutenant-colonel in 1847. At the battle of Chapultapec he was wounded and brevetted colonel. After this war was over, he was appointed superintendent of the Military Academy at West Point, and filled the position from 1852 to 1855. In 1858, he was with Albert Sydney Johnston, fighting the Indians in Texas. His last service in the "old army," was the capture of John Brown and his band, at Harper's Ferry, at the close of 1859.

It is useless and unnecessary to describe in this connection the military life of General Lee during the thirty years he served in the United States army; it is sufficient to say that every duty was fulfilled with scrupulous fidelity, and that he rose steadily from grade to grade, rewarded at each pro-

motion by the encomiums of his superior officers. General Scoot entertained the greatest admiration for him as a man and a soldier. A gentleman has stated that he had frequently heard him speak "in the very highest terms of Robert E. Lee as a soldier and Christian gentleman, but that on one occasion, when in the course of a confidential interview, he asked the direct question: 'General, whom do you regard as the greatest living soldier?' Without hesitation, and with marked emphasis, General Scott replied: 'COLONEL ROBERT E. LEE is not only the greatest soldier of America, but the greatest soldier now living in the world. This is my deliberate conviction, from a full knowledge of his extraordinary abilities, and, if the occasion ever arises, Lee will win this place in the estimation of the whole world.' The general then went into a detailed sketch of Lee's services, and a statement of his ability as an engineer, and his capacity not only to plan campaigns, but also to command large armies in the field, and concluded by saying: 'I TELL YOU, SIR, ROBERT E. LEE IS THE GREATEST SOLDIER NOW LIVING, AND IF HE EVER GETS THE OPPORTUNITY HE WILL PROVE HIMSELF THE GREATEST CAPTAIN OF HISTORY.'"

General Lee took no part in the political discussions which agitated the country prior to the outbreak of hostilities between the States. He was opposed to secession, but promptly resigned from the old army when it became a question as to whether he should fight for or against his native State. On that issue he had no doubts. Consequently, upon the secession of Virginia, and the firing upon Fort Sumter, he handed in his resignation, and offered his sword to

defend his native Virginia. His father before him, ardent Federalist as he was, had said: "Virginia is my country: her will I obey, however lamentable the fate to which it may subject me." Again his father had declared that "no consideration on earth could induce me to act a part, however gratifying to me, which could be construed into disregard or faithlessness to this Commonwealth." The son therefore acted in strict accordance with the principals of the father, which, it would be safe to say, had been shared by the majority of the patriots of the Revolution.

When testifying before a committee of Congress, after the war, General Lee stated that he had resigned because he believed that "the act of Virginia in withdrawing herself from the United States carried me along with it as a citizen of Virginia, and that her laws and acts were binding upon me." Though his own duty in this crisis was clearly marked out for him in his own conscience, he never sought to decide for others, not even for his own son. In writing to his own wife from Richmond, under date of 13th of May, 1861, he wrote: ". . . .Tell Custis he must consult his own judgment, reason, and conscience as to the course he may take. I do not wish him to be guided by my wishes or example. If I have done wrong, let him do better. The present is a momentous question, which every man must settle for himself and upon principle."

In a letter to the Hon. Reverdy Johnson, under date of 25th February, 1868, General Lee stated clearly his position and his sentiments, which led him to resign from the army and to refuse the most tempting offers. He used these words:

"I never intimated to anyone that I desired the

command of the United States Army, nor did I ever have a conversation with but one gentleman, Mr. Francis Preston Blair, on the subject, which was at his invitation, and I understood, at the instance of the President. After listening to his remarks, I declined the offer he made me to take command of the army that was to be brought in the field, stating, as candidly and as courteously as I could, that, though opposed to secession and deprecating war, I could take no part in an invasion of the Southern States.

"I went directly from the interview with Mr. Blair to the office of General Scott—told him of the proposition that had been made to me and my decision. Upon reflection after returning home, I concluded that I ought no longer to retain any commission I held in the United States Army, and on the second morning thereafter I forwarded my resignation to General Scott." This letter was as follows:

"Arlington, Va., 20th April, 1861.

General,—Since my interview with you on the 18th inst., I have felt that I ought no longer to retain my commission in the army. I, therefore, tender my resignation, which I request you will recommend for acceptance. It would have been presented at once, but for the struggle it has cost me to separate myself from a service to which I have devoted all the best years of my life, and all the ability I possessed. During the whole of that time, more than a quarter of a century, I have experienced nothing but kindness from my superiors, and the most cordial friendship from my comrades. To no one General, have I been as much indebted as to yourself for uniform kindness and consideration; and it has always been

my ardent desire to merit your approbation. I shall carry to the grave the most grateful recollections of your kind consideration, and you name and fame will always be dear to me. Save in the defense of my native State, I never desire again to draw my sword. Be pleased to accept my utmost earnest wishes for the continuance of your happiness and prosperity, and believe me most truly yours, etc."

"To Lieut-General, Winfield Scott, Commanding U. S. Army."

In casting his lot with his native State, General Lee acted with full consciousness of the gravity of the crisis. He entertained no illusions, such as some on each side professed to hold, that the war would be brief and of little importance; nor did he believe that a civil war could be avoided. Writing to his wife from Richmond, under the date of 13th May, 1861, he warned her: "Do not put faith in rumors of adjustment. I see no prospect for it. It cannot be while the passions on both sides are so infuriated. Make your plans for several years of war." At another time he said: ".....Both sides forget that we are all Americans, and that it must be a terrible struggle if it comes to war."

The following correspondence is interesting. Dr. May was a Pennsylvanian by birth, but had been many years a professor of the Theological Seminary of the Episcopal Church in Virginia, situated near Alexandria:

"Alexandria, 23rd, April, 1861.

My dear Robert,— The enclosed letter was written to me, as you will see, in consequence of a remark

I made to Dr. Sparrow, which he reported to the writer, Dr. May, that I hoped your connection with the Virginia forces, if you concluded to accept the command, might lead to some peaceful settlements to our difficulties. I hoped this from the friendship between yourself and General Scott. I have only time now to enclose you Dr. May's letter, and to offer my earnest prayer that God may make you instrumental in saving our land from this dreadful strife.

In haste. Yours truly,

"Col. Lee." CASSIUS F. LEE."

"Theological Seminary of Va., 22, April, 1861.

My dear sir,—I am sure of your sympathy with me in the motive of what I now write, even though you may think me presumptious and lacking in judgment. Two considerations prompt me; one, an Editorial in the 'National Intelligencer,' of today, placed by yourself in Dr. Sparrow's hands and read by him to me a few minutes ago, the other a suggestion that Col. Lee, now to be put in command of the Virginia troops, might, by God's blessing, bring peace to our distracted country. O, how my heart leaped at the thought! How many thousands, yea millions, would rise up to bless the man that should bring this to pass .

"I may be stepping out of my line in offering a word on the subject. But my heart is full, and I know you at least are willing to give me your attention. Who knows but that your cousin may be raised up by God for such a time as this? Could he bring about, at least, an armistice, preparatory to a National Assembly for a peaceful settlement of our troubles, how many hearts would he relieve and how

large his share in the blessedness of peacemakers. I do not enter into the political considerations of the matter. That is not my province. It may suffice to say that, so far as became me, whether in the North or in the South, I always gave my opinion against the organization and the proposed measures of the party now controlling the General Administration. I always held that organization to be not only needless, but mischievious. When it became so sectionally dominant, I hoped still that the more thoughtful members of it would shape its course. They seem to have been overborne. The unfortunate Proclamation of the President, and the measures which were its immediate antecedents, have utterly disappointed me and saddened me. But as I said, I do not enter into the political aspect of the great question now before us. I would regard it as a Christian should and especially a Christian minister.

"My feeble voice I lift for peace. I have often turned my thoughts to Col. Lee. The world knows his service in the Mexican War. Years ago I asked my brother-in-law, Major A. H. Bowman (now of West Point,) what army officers thought of him as a soldier? I remember well his emphatic answer. If those who were with him (Col. Lee) in Mexico, should answer, they would unanimously declare him to be, in all military qualifications, without a rival in the service. But my interest in him was quickened by hearing of his Christian character. During his absence in Mexico, I visited his family at Arlington, and heard from Mrs. Lee, allusions to his private letters. I received then my opinion of him as a Christian, and have had my eye on him ever since. May we not hope that God has put him in his pres-

ent position to be an instrument of abating the storm which now threatens shipwreck to the whole country? It is sad that so few of our public men are Christians. Col. Lee is a grand exception. I know, in an official post, which is not that of head of the government, he would find it difficult to follow the private promptings of his own Christian mind, for a soldier's business is not to advise his superiors but to obey. But great respect would be shown to the judgment and Christian spirit of one so distinguished as he. Virginia gave us our original independence through her Washington. She gave us our National Constitution through Jefferson, Madison and others. Can she not now, while we are threatened with the immeasurable evils of civil war, give us through Col. Lee peace? In common with other States, she may justly complain of wrongs. But will civil war repair them? Christianity teaches not only the duty, but the wisdom of patience and forgiveness. Virginia, from her geographical position, from her glorious share in the past and from her great political weight, has it in her power (am I presumptious in saying it?) to come as a mediator, rather as an umpire and settle the question, not only for the happiness of the whole country, but for her own special property. Should Col. Lee be a leader in this matter and place his native State in this grand position (which I must think she could hold), he will have an honor never reached by Napoleon or Wellington. If Virginia may not call back the people of the continent to union, she yet may to peace. Standing apart from others, she would not, could not be invaded. She could be a healer or a peacemaker, and have all the blessedness of such an office. The wis-

dom of seniors has not been allowed its part in our great questions. Young, impetuous spirits seem to be leading the mind of the country. Especially has not the Christian mind, the Church, been heard. Its voice must be for peace. Our sins may be too great to allow us to have again the blessedness of a united country, but may we not have peace? Is there not moral power in the Christion mind of the country to stay the hand of fraternal strife? How many wives, mothers, widows, sisters, how many quiet, peaceful citizens of all classes sigh for peace. How many families, now separated by wide geographical distances, would be divided in a way far more painful and dreadful by civil war? No quiet citizen, no Christian, can think of it without a fainting heart. During the civil wars of England, in the times of the Commonwealth, Lord Falkland was known in all Britian as one of the bravest men ever born in that land. After he had seen the indescribable wretchedness of the people of his native country in the strife of brothers, he would sit abstracted among his friends, and, sighing from the depth of his heart, exclaim, 'Peace, Peace.' I dare not say Col. Lee may bring us peace. The Lord can only do that. We may have so sinned that the wrath of God must lie upon us and make us suffer the awful judgment now threatening. How do all Christian sentiments, how do all the interests of the Christian Church, how do all our interests cry for peace.'

"I do not say the Gospel forbids war absolutely. Its direct primary call is to peace: 'Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called the children of God.' From my inmost soul, I pray that in this our day of trial, that blessedness may be enjoyed by

Col. Lee. In thus writing, do I seem to be a meddler? I am not so in purpose and motive. Perhaps I mistake my calling. I think, as a Christian and a Christian minister, I cannot err in wishing and praying for peace. Our great national questions cannot be settled except in time of peace. O, may that peace come now, at the beginning, instead of the end of a fearful conflict. So praying, I am sure of your sympathy, and subscribe myself, most sincerely your friend,

JAMES MAY."

"C. F. Lee, Esqr.

"Richmond, 25, April, 1861.

"My dear Cassius,—I have received your letter of the 23rd. I am sorry your nephew has left his college and become a soldier. It is necessary that persons on my staff should have a knowledge of their duties and experience of the wants of the service, to enable me to attend to other matters. It would otherwise give me great pleasure to take your nephew. I shall remember him if anything can be done.

"I am much obliged to you for Dr. May's letter. Express to him my gratitude for his sentiments, and tell him that no earthly act would give me so much pleasure, as to restore peace to my country. But I fear it is now out of the power of man, and in God alone must be our trust. I think our policy should be purely on the defensive. To resist aggression and allow time to allay the passions and reason to resume her sway. Virginia has today, I understood, joined the Confederate States. Her policy will doubtless, therefore, be shaped by united counsels. I cannot

say what it will be. But trust that a merciful Providence will not turn his face entirely from us and dash us from the height to which his smiles had raised us.

"I wanted to say many things to you before I left home. But the event was rendered so imperatively speedy that I could not. May God preserve you and yours. Very truly, R. E. Lee."

So, failing to secure peace, General Lee prepared for war with all the ability he possessed. How well he served his State, it is not necessary to describe in a sketch of this nature; as Dr. Field has said, "The world knows it by heart."

Colonel Chesney, of the English army, believes: "The day will come when the evil passions of the great civil war will sleep in oblivion, and the North and South do justice to each other's motives, and forget each other's wrongs. Then history will speak with clear voice of the deeds done on either side, and the citizens of the whole Union do justice to the memories of the dead, and place above all others the name of the great chief of whom we have written. In strategy, mighty; in battle, terrible; in adversity, as in prosperity, a hero indeed; with the simple devotion to duty and the rare purity of the ideal Christian knight,—he joined all the kingly qualities of a leader of men. It is a wonderous future indeed that lies before America; but in her annals of the years to come, as in those of the past, there will be found few names that can rival in unsullied lustre that of the heroic defender of his native Virginia, Robert Edward Lee."

Leaving Lee, the general to the historian, it is the design of this brief sketch to tell something of

the characteristics of the man. In pursuance of this purpose, some few of his letters, written in the confidence of friendship, or with the love of the parent, are quoted, whole or in part, as best fulfills this idea. Extracts might be taken from some of the numerous and most eloquent eulogies that have been paid General Lee, since his death, by the most gifted orators of the South. Anyone of these would furnish a complete and eloquent sketch of the man and the soldier. Yet they might all be considered the biased opinions of personal friends, or due to sectional pride. It seems better, therefore to give the impressions of a stranger of one not partial through friendship or sectional pride. In the summer of 1889, the Rev. Henry M. Field, a northern man, the gifted editor of the "New York Evangelist," visited Lexington, and wrote two letters to his paper, giving fully the impressions he had gathered there of General Lee's personality from the lips of those who knew him most intimately. Extracts from these two letters are given; parts being omitted which are less closely connected with General Lee. The first letter is headed :

"The Last Years of General Lee."

" 'The last hope of the Confederacy was dead when Stonewall Jackson was laid in his grave at Lexington.' So said the Major after he had taken the greater part of a day in detailing to me, to my intense interest, the marvelous career of the great soldier. But not so reasoned all those who had fought by Jackson's side. Not so Jackson himself; for when, on hearing of his wound, Lee wrote to him, 'Could I have directed events, I should have chosen,

for the good of the country, to have been disabled in your stead,' answered "No, No! Better loose twenty Jacksons than one Lee!' And now though Jackson was dead, Lee still lived, and hope lived with him; victory was still possible; and in that faith, and under that leadership the Confederates fought on for two years more. (Jackson died on the 10th of May, 1863; but Lee did not surrender until the 9th of April, 1865). How well they fought is a matter of history. They fought as they could not have fought, had they not been led by a great Commander. Some, I know, assume to criticise the strategy shown in his campaigns. To such I have only to say that it is a very poor compliment to our leaders and our armies, to question the abilities of one who, with less than half the numbers, kept back for two years the tremendous forces of the North that were pressing in on every side. Whatever others may say of General Lee, the great soldiers who fought against him fully concede his splendid military genius. But it is not the purpose of this letter to speak of his military career.

"That belongs to history. 'The world knows it by heart.' But there is a chapter in that life which the world does not know so well, which ought to be told, to the greater honor of the illustrious dead. The war was over. The Northern armies had returned victorious, while the veterans of the South, defeated, but not dishonored, took their way back to their desolate homes. The army disbanded and dispersed, what should its leader do? His old ancesteral home, standing on the noble height which looks down on the Potomac and across to the dome of the Capital, was in the hands of those against whom he

had been fighting for four years, and had even been turned into a national cemetery, in which slept thousands of the Union dead, whose very ghosts might rise up against his return. But if he was an exile from his own home, there were thousands of others open to him all over the South, and across the sea where his fame had gone before him, and would have made him a welcome guest in princely halls. But such a flight from his country (for so he would have regarded it) was impossible to one of his chivalrous spirit. He had cast in his lot with his people; they had believed in him and had followed him, as they thought, to certain triumph; he would not desert them in the day of their adversity.

"Of course, had he been willing to listen to them, he could have received any number of 'business' proposals. Rich, moneyed corporations would have been glad to 'retain' him at any price as President or Director, so that they could have the benefit of his great name. One, it is said, offered him $50,000 a year. But he was not to be allured by such temptations.. The very fact that they were coupled with offers of money was reason enough why he should reject them all, as he did, without a moments hesitation. Nor could he be allured by any military proposals. Maximilian offered to place him at the head of his army if he would go to Mexico, thinking that his genius might save the fortunes of the falling empire. But he would not accept any exile, however splendid. His answer was, 'I love the mountains of Virginia still.' His work must be at home, for work he must have. After his active life, he would not sink down into ildeness. With his military career ended, he must find a new career in civil life. Be-

sides, he had a proud spirit of independence, which would not permit him to live on the bounty of the rich at home or the titled abroad. 'He would work for a living,' like the poorest of his soldiers. At length came a proposal that seemed most alien to his former pursuits; that the Commander of the Southern Armies should become the President of a college. And yet this change from a military to an academic career was not so violent as it might seem. He had been for three years Superintendent of the Military Academy at West Point, where he was associated with young men. He had been himself a student there, and had been through all the stages of scholarly discipline. Besides, the position of the college to which he was invited, in Lexington, Virginia, was attractive to him. It was remote from cities, among the mountains, and yet within the limits of that 'Old Dominion,' which he looked upon as his mother.

"When it was known that he had accepted the position, his coming was looked for with great eagerness by the people of Lexington; but he did not fix the time, as he wished to avoid any public demonstration. But it had been arranged that when he came he should spend a few days in the hospitable dwelling in which I was so fortunate as to be a guest. While thus in expectancy, the Professor was one day taking a walk, when he saw riding up the street, a figure that he instantly recognized as the same he had so often seen at the head of the army; and to make the picture perfect, he was mounted on his old war horse—a magnificent iron gray, called 'Traveler' —that had so often borne his master through the smoke of battle. He wore no military uniform, nor sign of rank, but a light summer dress, while a broad

Panama hat shaded a face that no one could mistake. Advancing toward him, the professor told of the arrangements for his entertainment till he could be established in a house for himself, and led the way to his home. Naturally my friend's family were at first somewhat awed by the presence of their illustrious guest. But this was soon dissipated by his simple and unaffected manner. What 'broke the ice' most completely was his manner with the children. He was always very fond of little people, and as soon as they appeared, 'Uncle Robert' as he was affectionately called in the army, had them in his arms and on his knees, till they soon felt perfectly at home with him. They 'captured' him at once, and he 'captured' them, and in this captured their parents also. From that moment all constraint disappeared, though nothing could ever take from the profound respect and veneration with which they looked up to 'General Lee.'

"This was in September, 1865, and on the 2d of October, after solemn prayer by the venerable Dr. White, he took the oath of office, as required by the laws of the college, and thus became its President. Naturally his name drew great numbers of students, not only from Virginia, but from all parts of the South, who were eager to 'serve' under such a leader, and the number of undergraduates rose from one hundred and fifty to over four hundred. . . . . In one respect his influence was immeasurable. Every man in the South looked up to General Lee as the highest type of manhood, and his very presence was an inspiration. This is the influence which young men feel more than any other—that inspired by intense admiration—an influence that would have been

very potent if the object of their admiration had been merely a great soldier, dazzling them by his genius, but destitute of high principals. Had that been the case, his influence would have been demoralizing as now it was elevating, since his superiority in other respects was united with a character that was so gentle and so good. That he might reach the young, he sought their acquaintance, not standing apart in icy dignity. Professor White tells me that, if they were walking together in the college grounds, and a student was seen approaching, he would ask who he was, and when he came up, instead of passing him with a stately bow, would stop and call him by name, and ask him about his family and his studies, and speak a few words of encouragement, which the young man would not forget to his dying day. To be under the authority and influence of such a man was an education in manliness. There was not a student who did not feel it, and to whom it was not the highest ambition to be guided by such a leader, to be infused with his spirit, and to follow his example.....

"He knew that whatever fell from his lips would be repeated, and not always as he had said it, but with a change of words, or in a different tone of voice, that might give it another meaning. Indeed, with all his caution, he was often quoted in saying what he did not say. As an illustration, Professor White told me that a story had gone the rounds of the papers to the effect that in a conversation, General Lee had brought his clenched hands down on the table, to give emphasis to his utterance, as he said, 'If I had had Stonewall Jackson with me, I should have won the battle of Gettysburg and estab-

lished the Southern Confederacy.' Now said the professor, without ever asking him, I know that such an occurrence never took place, for in the first place General Lee 'never brought his hand down on the table'—he was not that sort of a man—it is impossible to conceive of him as using any violence of gesture or of language. And as to Stonewall Jackson, while he did feel keenly the absence of that great corps commander, he was not the man to indulge in sweeping and positive statements; he never spoke with such absolute assurance of anything, but always with a degree of reserve, as once, when we were riding together, he said in his usual guarded and cautious manner; 'If I had had Stonewall Jackson with me—so far as man can see—I should have won the battle of Gettysburg.' So careful was he to put in this qualification: for he always recognized an overruling Power that may disappoint the wisest calculations, and defeat the most careful combinations of courage and skill."

## "THE CHARACTER OF GENERAL LEE."

"My last letter left us in the college Chapel at Lexington, gazing upon the recumbent statue of General Lee. While standing here, in the very presence of the dead, I am moved to say a few words in regard to the life that ended in his tomb, and the character of the man whose name is carved upon this stone. As I read history, and compare the men who have figured in the events that make history—in wars and revolutions—it seems to me that General Lee was not only a great soldier, but a great man, one of the greatest that our country has produced. After his

death, the college which had hitherto borne the name of Washington, by whom it was endowed, was re-christened 'Washington and Lee University'—a combination which suggests a comparison of the two men whose names are here brought together. Can we trace any likeness between them? At first it seems that no characters, as well as no careers, could be more alien to each other than those of the two great leaders, one of whom the Founder of the Government which the other did his utmost to destroy. But nature brings forth her children in strange couples, with resemblances in some cases as marked, and as yet unexpected, as are contrasts in others. Washington and Lee, though born in different centuries, were children of the same mother, Old Virginia and had her best blood in their veins. Descended from the stock of the English Cavaliers, both were born 'gentleman,' and never could be any thing else. Both were trained in the school of war, and as leader of armies it would not be a violent assumption to rank Lee as the equal of Washington. But it is not in the two soldiers, but in the two men, that the future historian will find point of resemblance.

"Washington was not a brilliant man; nor a 'man of genius,' such as now and then appears to dazzle mankind; but he had what was far better than genius—a combination of all the qualities that win human trust; in which intelligence is so balanced by judgment and exhalted by character as to constitute a natural superiority; indicating one who is born to command, and to whom all men turn, when their hearts are 'failing them for fear,' as a leader. He was great not only in action, but in repose; great in

his very calm—in the fortitude with which he bore himself through all changes of fortune, through dangers and disasters, neither elated by victory nor depressed by defeat—mental habitudes which many will recognize as re-appearing in the one who seems to have formed himself upon that great model. Washington was distinguished for his magnanimity. Was not Lee also? Men in public station are apt to be sensitive to whatever concerns their standing before the world; and so, while taking to themselves the credit of success, they are strongly tempted to throw upon others the blame of failure. Soldiers especially are jealous of their reputation; and if a commander loses a battle his first impluse is to cast the odium of defeat upon some unfortunate officer. Somebody blundered; this or that subordinate did not do his duty. Military annals are filled with these recriminations. If Napoleon met with a check in his mighty plans he had no scruple in laying it to the misconduct of some lieutenant; unless, as in Russia, he could throw it upon the elements, the wintry snows and the frozen rivers—anything to relieve himself from the imputation of the want of foresight or provision for unexpected dangers. At Waterloo it was not he that failed in his strategy, but Marshal Ney, that failed in the execution. In this respect General Lee was exactly his opposite. If he suffered a disaster he never sought to evade responsibility by placing it upon others. Even in the greatest reverse of his life, the defeat at Gettysburg, when he saw the famous charge of Pickett melt away under the terrible fire that swept the field, till the ranks were literally torn in pieces by shot and shell, he did not vent his despair in rage and re-

proaches, but rushing to the front, took the blame upon himself, saying, 'It is all my fault.' Perhaps no incident of his life showed more the nobility of his nature.

"When the war was over General Lee had left to him at Lexington, about the same number of years that Napoleon had at St. Helena; and if he had had the same desire to pose for posterity in the part of an illustrious exile, his mountain home would have furnished as picturesque a background as the rocky island in the South Atlantic, from which he could have dictated 'Conversations' that should furnish the materials of history. He need not have written or published a single line, if he had only been willing to let others do it for him. By their pens he had opportunity to tell of the great part he had acted in the war in a way to make the whole chain of events contribute to his fame. But he seemed to care little for fame, and, indeed, was unmoved when others claimed the credit of his victories. If it be, as Pascal says, 'the truest mark of a great mind to be born without envy,' few men in history have shown more of this greatness than he. And when, as was sometimes the case, old companions-in-arms reflected upon him to excuse their own mistakes, he had only to lift the veil from the secrets of history to confound them. But under all temptations he was dumb. Nothing that he did or said was more truly grand than the silence with which he bore the misrepresentations of friend or foe. This required a self-command such as Washington had not to exercise at the end of his military career: for he retired from the scene crowned with victory, with a whole nation at his feet ready to do him honor, while Lee had to bear the reproach

of the final disaster—a reproach in which friends sometimes joined with foes. Yet to both he answered only with the same majestic calm, the outward sign of his magnificent self-control. Such magnanimity belongs to the very highest order of moral qualities, and shows a character rare in any country or any age.

"This impression of the man does not grow less with closer observation. With the larger number of 'great men' the greatness is magnified by distance and separation. As we come nearer they dwindle in statue, till, when we are in their very presence and look them squarely in the face, they are found to be but men like ourselves, and sometimes very ordinary men—with some special ability, perhaps which gives them success in the world, but who for all that are full of selfishness, which is the very essence of meanness, and puffed up with paltry conceit and vanity that stamps them as little rather than great. Far different was the impression made by General Lee upon those who saw him in the freedom of private intercourse. It might be expected that the soldiers who fought under him should speak with pride and admiration of their old commander; but how did he appear to his neighbors? Here in Lexington, everybody knew him, at least by sight. They saw his manner of life from day to day, in his going out and his coming in, and on all the impression was the same; the nearer he came to them the greater he seemed. Everyone has some anecdote to tell of him, and it is always of something that was noble and lovable. Those who knew him best loved him most and revered him most. This was not a greatness that was assumed, that was put on like a military cloak; it was

in the man, and could not be put on or off; it was the greatness which comes from the very absence of pretension. And those who came closest to him, give us a still further insight into his nature by telling us that what struck them most was the extent of his sympathy. Soldiers are commonly supposed to be cold and hard—a temper of mind to which they are innured by their very profession. Those whose business is the shedding of blood are thought to delight in human suffering. It is hard to believe that a soldier can have a very tender heart. Yet few men were so sensitive to others' pain as General Lee. All came near him perceived that with his manly strength there was united an almost womanly sweetness. It was this gentleness which made him great, and which has enshrined him in the heart of his people forever.

"This sympathy for the suffering showed itself, not in any public act so much as in a private and delicate office which imposed upon him a very heavy burden—one that he might have declined, but the taking of which showed the man. He had an unlimited correspondence. Letters poured in upon him by the hundred and the thousand. They came from all parts of the South, not only from his old companion-in-arms, but from those he had never seen or heard of. Every mother that had lost a son in the war felt that she had a right to pour her sorrow into the ear of one who was not insensible to her grief. Families left in utter poverty appealed to him for aid. Most men would have shrunk from a labor so great as that of answering these letters. Not so General Lee. He read them, not only patiently, as a man performs a disagreeable duty, but with a

tender interest, and so far as was possible, he returned the kindest answers. If he had little money to give, he could at least give sympathy, and to his old soldiers and their wives and children, it was more than money to know that they had a place in that great heart.

"While thus ministering to his stricken people, there is one public benefit which he rendered that ought never to be forgotten. Though the war was over, he still stood in public relations in which he could render an immeasurable service to the whole country. There are no crisis in a nation's life more perilous than those following civil war. The peace that comes after it, is peace only in name, if the passions of the war still live. After our great struggle, the South was full of inflamable materials. The fires were but smoldering in ashes and might break out at any minute, and rage with destructive fury. If the spirit of some had had full swing, the passions of the Civil War would have been not only perpetuated, but increased, and have gone down as an inheritance of bitterness, from generation to generation. This stormy sea of passion, but one man could control. He had no official position, civil or military. But he was the representative of the 'Lost Cause.' He had led the Southern armies to battle, and he had the unbounded confidence of millions; and it was his attitude and his words that did more than any thing else to still the angry tempests that the war had left behind. It was the sight of the great chieftain, so calm, so ready to bear the burden with his people, that soothed their anger and their pride; and made the old soldiers of the Confederacy feel that they could accept what had been accepted

by their leader; and that, as he had set the example, it was no unworthy sacrifice to become loyal supporters of the restored American Union. It is therefore not too much to say that it is owing in great measure to General Lee, that the Civil War has not left a lasting division between the North and the South, and that they form to day one United Country.

"These are the greatful memories to be recalled now that he who was so mighty in war, and so gentle in peace, has passed beyond the reach of praise or blame. Do you tell me that he was an 'enemy,' and that by as much as we love our country we ought to hate its enemies? But there are no enemies among the dead. When the grave closes over those with whom we have been at strife, we can drop our hatreds, and judge of them without passion, and even kindly, as we wish those who come after us to judge of us. In a few years all the contemporaries of General Lee will be dead and gone; the great soldiers that fought with him and that fought against him, will alike have passed to the grave; and then perhaps there will be a nearer approach of feeling between friend and foe.

"Ah, yes,' say some who admit his greatness as a soldier and leader, 'if it were not for his ambition, that stopped not at the ruin of his country.' Such is the fatal accusation:

"Ceasar was ambitious:
If it were so, it was a grievious fault,
And grieviously hath Ceasar answered it."

"But was that ambition in him which was pa-

triotism in us? How is it that we who were upborne for four years by a passion for our country, that stopped at no sacrifices, cannot understand that other men, of the same race and blood, could be inspired with the same passion for what they looked upon as their country, and fight for it with the same heroic devotion that we fought for ours? They as well as we, were fighting for an idea: we for union, and they for independence—a cause which was as sacred to them as ours to us. Is it that what was patriotism on one side was ambition on the other? No; it was not disappointed ambition that cut short that life, but a wound that struck far deeper. One who watched by him in those long night hours, tells me that he died of a broken heart. This is the most touching aspect of the warrior's death; that he did not fall on the field of battle, either in the hour of defeat or victory, but in silent grief for sufferings which he could not relieve. There is something infinitely pathetic in the way that he entered in the condition of the whole people, and gave his last strength to comfort those who were fallen and cast down. It was this constant strain of hand and brain and heart that finally snapped the strings of life so that the last view of him as he passes out of sight, is one of unspeakable sadness. The dignity is preserved, but it is the dignity of woe. It is the same tall and stately form, yet not wearing the robes of a conqueror, but bowed with sorrows not his own. In the mournful majesty, silent with a grief beyond words, this great figure passes into history.

"There we leave him to the judgment of another generation, that 'standing afar off' may see some things more clearly than we. When the historian of

future ages comes to write the History of the Great Republic, he will give the first place to that War of the Revolution, by which our country gained its independence, and took its place among the nations of the earth; and the second to the late Civil War, which, begun for separation, ended in a closer and consolidated union. That was the last act in the great drama of our nation's life, in which history cannot forget the part was borne by him whose silent form lies within this sepulchre. "As I took a last look at the sarcophagus, I observed that it bore no epitaph; no words of praise were carved upon the stone; only a name, with two dates:

Robert Edward Lee,
Born January 19, 1807;
Died October 12, 1870.

"That is all; but it is enough: all the rest may be left to the calm, eternal judgment of history."

So very many of General Lee's letters have been published that it is a difficult task to select a few for renewed publication, or to choose a few as being the best. However, those to the members of his own immediate family certainly give the closest insight into the true character of the man. Writing to his two eldest sons, from,

"Ship Massachusetts, off Lobos, 27, Feb., 1847.

"My dear boys:—I have received your letters with the greatest pleasure, and, as I always like to talk to you both together, I will not separate you in my letters, but write one to you both. I was so much gratified to hear of your progress at school, and that you will continue to advance, and that I shall have

the happiness of finding you much improved in all your studies on my return. I shall not feel my long separation from you, if I find that my absence has been of no injury to you, and that you both have grown in goodness and knowledge, as well as stature. But, ah! How much I will suffer on my return, if the reverse has occured! You enter all my thoughts, into all my prayers; and on you, in part, will depend whether I shall be happy or miserable, as you know how much I love you. You must do all in your power to save me from pain.

"You will learn by my letter to your grandmother, that I have left Tampico. I saw many things to remind me of you, though that was not necessary to make me wish you were with me. The river was so calm and beautiful, and the boys were playing about the boats and swimming their ponies. Then there were troops of donkeys carrying water through the streets. They had a kind of saddle, something like a cart saddle, though larger, that carried two ten gallon kegs on each side, which was a load for a donkey. They had no bridles on, but would come along in strings to the river, and as soon as their kegs were filled, start off again. They were fatter and sleeker than any donkeys I have ever seen before, and seemed to be better cared for. I saw a great many ponies, too. They were larger than those in the upper country, but did not seem so enduring. I got one to ride around the fortifications. He had a Mexican bit and saddle, and paced delightfully, but every time my sword struck him in the flanks, would jump and try to run off. Several of them had been broken to harness, by Americans, and I saw some teams, in wagons, driven-four-in-hand, well matched and trotting well.

"We had a grand parade on General Scott's arrival. The troops were all drawn up on the river bank, and fired a salute as he passed them. He landed at the market, where lines of sentinels were placed to keep off the crowd. In front of the landing the artillery was drawn up, which received him in the centre of the column, and escorted him through the streets to his lodgings. They had provided a handsome gray horse, richly caparisoned, for him, but he preferred to walk, with his staff around him, and a dragoon led his horse behind us. The windows along the streets we passed were crowded with people, and the boys and girls were in great glee, the Governor's island band playing all the time. There were six thousand soldiers in Tampico. Mr. Barry was the adjutant of the escort. I think you would have enjoyed with me the oranges and sweet potatoes. Major Smith became so fond of the chocolate, that I could hardly get him away from the house. We only remained there one day. I have a nice stateroom on board this ship; Joe Johnson and myself occupy it, but my poor Jos is so sick all the time, I can do nothing with him. I left Jem to come on with the horses, as I was afraid they would not be properly cared for. Vessels were expressly fitted up for the horses, and parties of dragoons detailed to take care of them. I had hoped they would reach here by this time, as I wanted to see how they were fixed. I took every precaution for their comfort, provided them with bran, oats, etc., and had slings made to pass under them and attached to the covering above, so that, if in the heavy sea, they should slip, or be thrown off their feet, they could not fall. I had to sell my good old horse Jim, as I could not find room for him, or, rather, I did not want to crowd the others. I know I shall want him

when I land. Creole was the admiration of every one at Brazos, and they hardly believed she had carried me so far, and looked so well. Jem says there is nothing like her in all the country, and I believe he likes her better than Tom or Jerry. The sorrel mare did not appear to be so well after I got to Brazos. I had to put one of the men on her, whose horse had given out, and the saddle hurt her back. She had gotten well, however, before I left, and I told Jem to ride her every day. I hope they may both reach shore again in safety, but I fear they will have a hard time. They will first have to be put aboard a steamboat and carried to the ship that lies about two miles out at sea, then hoisted in, and how we shall get them ashore again, I do not know. Probably throw them overboard and let them swin there. I do not think we shall remain here more than one day longer. General Worth's and General Twigg's divisions have arrived, which include the regulars, and I suppose the volunteers will be coming on every day. We shall probably go on the 1st down the coast, select a place for debarkation, and make all the arrangements preparatory to the arrival of the troops. I shall have plenty to do there, and am anxious for the time to come and hope all may be successful.

"Tell Rob he must think of me very often, be a good boy, and always love Papa. Take care of Speck and the colts. Mr. Sedwick and officers send their love to you. The ship rolls so that I can scarcely write. You must write to me very often. I am always very glad to hear from you. Be sure I am thinking of you, and that you have the prayers of your affectionate father."

To his eldest son, then a cadet at West Point, he wrote this grand letter. No apology for its re-publication is needed.

"Arlington House, 5th, April, 1852.

My dear son.—I am just in the act of leaving home for New Mexico. My fine old regiment has been ordered to that distant region, and I must hasten on to see that they are properly cared for. I have but little to add in reply to your letters of March 26, 27, 28. Your letters breathe a true spirit of frankness; they have given myself and your mother great pleasure. You must study to be frank with the world. Frankness is the child of honesty and courage. Say just what you mean to do on every occasion, and take it for granted you mean to do right. If a friend asks a favor you should grant it if it is reasonable; if not, tell him plainly why you cannot. You will wrong him and wrong yourself by equivocation of any kind. Never do a wrong thing to make a friend or keep one. The man who requires you to do so is dearly purchased at a sacrifice. Deal kindly, but firmly, with all your classmates; you will find it the policy which wears the best. Above all, do not appear to others what you are not. If you have any fault to find with any one tell him, not others, of what you complain. There is no more dangerous experiment than that of undertaking to be one thing before a man's face and another behind his back. We should live, act, and say nothing to the injury of anyone. It is not only best as a matter of principle, but it is the path to peace and honor.

"In regard to duty, let me, in conclusion of this hasty letter, inform you that nearly a hundred years

ago there was a day of remarkable gloom and darkness, still known as the dark day—a day when the light of the sun was slowly extinguished, as if by an eclipse. The Legislature of Connecticut was in session, and, as its members saw the unexcepted and unaccountable darkness coming on, they shared the general awe and terror. It was supposed by many that the last day, the day of judgment had come. Some one, in the consternation of the hour, moved an adjournment. Then there arose an old Puritan legislator, Davenport of Stamford, and said; that if the last day had come he desired to be found at his place, doing his duty, and, therefore moved that candles be brought in, so that the House could proceed with its duty. There was quietness in that man's mind— the quietness of heavenly wisdom and inflexible willingness to obey present duty. Duty, then, is the sublimest word in our language. Do your duty in all things, like that old Puritan. You cannot do more; you should never wish to do less. Never let me or your mother wear one gray hair for any lack of duty on your part."

Mrs. Lee once stated that "attention to 'small' matters was pre-eminently characteristic of General Lee; and she thought his example, in this respect, might be most profitably studied by the young people of the present day." This trait he exhibited through life; no detail of anything he had in charge seems to have been considered too trifling to merit his care that it should be thoroughly well done. This is well illustrated in the following to his wife. Though a thousand miles from home, he sought to be there in counsel, and to aid her in all the petty details of her

household affairs; he would save her all the worry and all the care he could:

"Jefferson Barracks, 20, August, 1855.

"I announced on the envelope of my letter of the 17th, dearest M., that yours of the 11th, accompanied by Fitzhugh's affectionate communication of the same date, had just reached me. I have no doubt that my reply to his former letter was carried out by your messenger, who mailed the last. I have, however, hastened to answer his last letter, for it deserved a prompt reply, and hope it may reach him in time before his departure. Our mails are slow. It only goes every day from here to St. Louis, and I find it takes a fortnight for a letter to go and come. I enclosed in my letter of the 17th, to him my check No. 112, dated 1st., Sept., to his order for $200, on Bank of Commerce, in New York; and to you, my check of 22, August, to your order on Farmer's Bk., of Va., at Alex., for $100, and my check of 1, Sept., to the order of Hugh W. Sheffy on same bank for $195. I repeat that you may look out for the letter and on its non-reception, stop payment of the checks at the respective banks. With this I send my check No. 113, of 25th, of Aug., '55, on Bank of Commerce, in New York, to the order of Collins & Co., Baltimore, for $200, which as you have his bill, I have thought you had better remit to him. You may tell him that I have deducted $20.00 from his original offer, as the value of the two registers not used, and the cost of workmanship thereby saved; the payment of plaster's bill, hauling, etc., and which if not satisfactory, I will arrange another time. The bricks and mortar, I was to furnish. The board of his men and

hauling was not much, and was more a convenience to him than an expense. Perhaps $15, would have been enough, and if he say so, I wish you would send him $5. I would rather overpay than underpay mechanics. You will have to use the $100 I sent you to pay off all your bills, get the girls to school, and Fitzhugh, (W. H. F. Lee), to C., for I am afraid he is penniless, and I will send you another in time for my dear little Rob, who shall not suffer if I have to sell the shirt from my back. I am glad he is well again. I trust he may keep so, but I fear you will all have bilious attacks. I think it is better to write for the furniture you want from W. P. (West Point), while Mr. Smith is there; after he goes I do not know who will attend to it. I suppose, however Mr. Newland and Mr. O'Maher will be left. The picture had better come by express. It will not be ready to varnish before next spring. I am glad you are going to have the book cases repaired. What will you do with the old harpsichord and organ? The former will not be appropriate for the room and the latter ought to give place to the hall table at W. P. Renwick could make you another pair of chairs similar to the present, and the lounge, table and four chairs would be sufficient. If you have them made, recollect to have them oiled before being varnished, or the color will be too light. I wish indeed I could be there to help you, but it is impossible. You must have every thing nice and comfortable for your father and friends, and I will enjoy it through you. I mentioned in my last letter the necessity of paying taxes on the Washington lot before the end of August, to get the benefit of the discount. The amt. under the present assessment is between $4 and $5 and is payable at the collector's

office at the City Hall. It must be paid every July or August, I forget which. You have not mentioned lately anything about Mary's foot. I hope, therefore, it is still improving. Neither did you give me the result of the consultation about the horse's eye. Sometimes an operation in those cases has to be resorted to, but it ought to be done by a skillful operator. I hope in this case it will not be necessary. Give much love to your father and children. Tell Becky she had better come. Goodnight, my Dear M., and believe me always yours.

P. S. "I was very glad to see that Hill Carter, Jr., of Shirley had taken one of the honors at Wm. and Mary. Who is the A. M. Randolph, of Faquier, whose oration on 'Human Progress,' is so highly spoken of? I am very sorry to see announced this morning the death of Abbot Lawrence. He is a national loss. But his deeds live after him."

While the approaching storm of civil war was as yet hardly visible, even as a tiny cloud in the political sky, General Lee wrote to his wife of the evils of slavery and his views as to the proper methods for their emancipations:

"Fort Brown, Texas, 27th, December, 1856.

The steamer has arrived from New Orleans, bringing full files of papers and general intelligence from the 'States'. I have enjoyed the former very much, and, in absence of particular intelligence, have perused with much interest the series of the Alexandria Gazette from the 20th, of November to the 8th, of December, inclusive. Besides the usual good reading matter, I was interested in the relation of local affairs, and inferred, from the ordinary and quiet course of events, that all the neighborhood was going

on well. I trust it may be so, and that you and particularly all at Arlington and our friends elsewhere are well. The steamer brought the President's message to congress and the reports of the various heads of the departments, so that we are now assured that the government is in operation, and the Union in existence. Not that I had any fear to the contrary, but it is satisfactory always to have facts to go on; they restrained supposition and conjecture, confirmed the faith and bring contentment. I was much pleased with the President's message, and the report of the Secretary of War. The views of the President on the domestic institutions of the South are truthfully and faithfully expressed. In this enlightened age there are few, I believe, but will acknowledge that slavery as an institution is a moral and political evil in any country. It is useless to expatiate on its disadvantages. I think, it, however, a greater evil to the white than to the black race, and while my feelings are strongly interested in behalf of the latter, my sympathies are stronger for the former. The blacks are immeasurably better off here than in Africa, morally, socially, and physically. The painful discipline they are undergoing is necessary for their instruction as a race, and, I hope, will prepare and lead them to better things. How long their subjection may be necessary is known and ordered by a wise and merciful Providence. Their emancipation will sooner result from a mild and melting influence than the storms and contests of fiery controversy. This influence, though slow, is sure. The doctrine and miracles of our Saviour have required nearly two thousand years to convert but a small part of the human race, and even among Chris-

tian nations, what gross errors still exist! While we see the course of final abolition of slavery is onward, and we give it to the aid of our prayers and all justifiable means in our power, we must leave the progress as well as the result in his Hands, who sees the end and who chooses to work by slow things and with whom a thousand years are as but a single day; although the abolitionist must know this, and must see that he has neither the right nor the power of operating except by moral means and suasion; and if he means well to the slave he must not create angry feelings in the master. That although he may not approve the mode by which it pleases Providence to accomplish its purpose, the result will ever be the same; that the reasons he gives for interference in what he has no concern holds good for every kind of interference with our neighbors when we disapprove their conduct. It is not strange that the descendants of those Pilgrim Fathers, who crossed the Atlantic to preserve the freedom of their opinion have always proved themselves intolerant of the spiritual liberty of others? I hope you had a joyous Christmas at Arlington, and that it may be long and often repeated. I thought of you all and wished to be with you. Mine was gratefully but silently passed. I endeavored to find some little presents for the children in the garrison to add to their amusement, and succeeded better than I anticipated. The stores are very barren of any such things here, but by taking the week beforehand in my daily walks, I picked up little by little something for all. Tell Mildred I got a beautiful Dutch doll for little Emma Jones—one of those crying babies that can open and shut their eyes, turn their heads, etc. For the two other little

girls, Puss Shirley and Mary Sewell, I found handsome French teapots to match cups given to them by Mrs. Waite; then by means of knives and books I satisfied the boys. After dispensing my presents, I went to church. The discourse was on the birth of our Saviour. It was not as simply or touchingly told as it is in the Bible. By previous invitation I dined with Major Thomas at 2 P. M. on roast turkey and plum pudding. He and his wife were alone. I had provided a pretty singing bird for the little girl, and passed the afternoon in my room. God bless you all."

To his second son, then on duty in the West, he wrote, under date of January 1st, 1859: "A happy New Year! And many returns of the same to you, my precious Roon! Ours has been gladdened by the reception of your letter of the 4th of December from Presidio Barracks. It is the first line that has reached us since your second letter from Fort Bridger. I am sorry you have received nothing from us. I have written often and by various routes, and the other members of the family have done the same. Those that are toiling over the plains, I suppose, will never reach you. When I first learned that the Sixth was ordered to the Pacific, I sent some letters to Benicia. When your letter arrived from Fort Bridger, saying your regiment had departed from Salt Lake and that you were at Camp Floyd, I inclosed some letters to Major Porter's care. After seeing that the regiment was stopped at Carson's Valley and had sent back for animals, I conjectured that you would be pushed on with your recruits, and would labor through to the Pacific, and I resumed my direction to Benicia. Surely, some of these letters

should reach you. . . . But, now that you have caught Custis, I hope you are indemnified for all your privations. I am delighted at you two being together, and nothing has occurred so gratifying to me for the past year. Hold on to him as long as you can. Kiss him for me, and sleep with him every night. He must do the same with you and charge it all to my account. God grant that it could be my fortune to be with you both! I am glad that you stood the march so well, and are so robust and bearded. I always thought and said there was stuff in you for a good soldier, and I trust you will prove it. I cannot express the gratification I felt, in meeting Colonel May in New York, at the incomiums he passed under your soldiership, zeal, and devotion to duty. But I was more pleased at the report of your conduct. That went nearer to my heart, and was of infinitely more comfort to me. Hold on to your purity and virtue. They will proudly sustain you in all trials and difficulties, and cheer you in every calamity. I was sorry to see, from your letter to your mother, that you smoke occasionally. It is dangerous to meddle with. You have in store so much better use for your mouth. Reserve it, Roone, for its legitimate pleasure. Do not poison and corrupt it with stale vapors or tarnish your beard with their stench."

Some of the letters, written during the trying times of the war, will show how the stern soldier threw off grave responsibilities of his position, to indulge in a little friendly badinage, or to pour forth his sympathy with the afflicted:

"Coosawhatchie, S. C., 25th, December, 1861.

'My dear daughter: Having distributed such poor Christmas gifts as I had to those around me, I have been looking for something for you. Trifles are even hard to get these war times, and you must not therefore expect more. I have sent you what I thought most useful in your separation from me, and hope it will be of some service. Though stigmatized as 'vile dross,' it has never been a drug with me. That you may never want for it, restrict your wants to your necessities. Yet how little will it purchase! But see how God provides for our pleasures in every way. To compensate for such 'trash,' I send you some sweet violets, that I gathered for you this morning, while covered with dense white frost, whose chrystals glittered in the bright sun like diamonds, and formed a brooch of rare beauty and sweetness, which could not be fabricated by the expenditure of a world of money. May God guard and preserve you for me, my dear daughter! Among the calamities of war, the hardest to bear perhaps, is the separation of families and friends. Yet all must be endured to accomplish our independence, and maintain our self government. In my absence from you, I have thought of you very often, and regretted I could do nothing for your comfort. Your old home, if not destroyed by our enemies, has been so desecrated, that I cannot bear to think of it. I should have preferred it to have been wiped from the earth, its beautiful hill sunk, and its sacred trees buried, rather than to have been degraded by the presence of those who revel in the ill they do for their own selfish purposes. You see what a poor sinner I am, and how unworthy to possess what has been given me;

for that reason it has been taken away. I pray for a better spirit, and that the hearts of our enemies may be changed. In your homeless condition, I hope you make yourself contented and useful. Occupy yourself in aiding those more helpless than yourself.....Think always of your father."

Of Arlington and Stratford, the two homes around which so many hallowed memories were grouped, he wrote his wife the same day:

"I cannot let this day of grateful rejoicing pass without some communion with you. I am thankful for the many among the past that I have passed with you, and the remembrance of them fills me with pleasure. As to our old home, if not destroyed it will be difficult to ever be recognized. Even if the enemy had wished to preserve it, it would almost have been impossible. With the number of troops encamped around it, the change of officers, the want of fuel, shelter, etc., and all the dire necessities of war, it is vain to think of its being in a habitable condition. I fear, too, the books, furniture, and relics of Mount Vernon will be gone. It is better to make up our minds to a general loss. They cannot take away the remembrance of the spot, and the memories of those that to us rendered it sacred. That will remain to us as long as life will last and that we can preserve. In the absence of a home, I wish I could purchase Stratford. It is the only other place I could go to now acceptable to us, that would inspire me with pleasure and local love. You and the girls could remain there in quiet. It is a poor place, but we could make enough cornbread and bacon for our support, and the girls could weave us our clothes.

You must not build your hopes on peace, on account of the United States going to war with England. Our rulers are not entirely mad, and if they find England is in earnest, and that war or a restitution of the captives (Messrs. Mason and Slidell) must be the consequence, they will adopt the latter. We must make up our minds to fight our battles and win our independence alone. No one will help us."

To his daughter-in-law, the wife of his son, W. H. F. Lee, the three following letters were written:

"Coosawhatchie, S. C., December 29, 1861.

"You have no occasion to inform me, you precious Chass, that you have not written to me for a long time. That I already know, and you know that the letters I am obliged to write do not prevent my reading letters from you.

"If it requires fits of indignation to cause you to ventilate your paper, I will give occasion for a series of spasms, but in the present case I am innocent, as my proposition was for you to accompany your mamma to Fayetteville, and not to run off with her son to Fredericksburg. I am afraid the enemy will catch you; and, besides, there are too many young men there. I only want you to visit the old men, your grandpapa and papa. But what has got into your head to cause you to cut off your hair? If you will weave some delicate fabrics for the soldiers or the family out of it, I will be content with the sacrifice; or, if it is an expression of a penitential mood that has come over you young women, I shall not complain. Poor little A———! Somebody told me that a widower had been making sweet eyes at her through his spectacles. Perhaps she is preparing for

caps. But you can tell her not to distress herself. Her papa is not going to give her up in that way. I am, however, so glad that you are all together that I am willing that you should indulge in some extravagances if they do not result in serious hurt, as they will afford a variety to the grave occupation of knitting, sewing, spinning, and weaving. You will have to get out the old wheels and looms again, else I do not know where we poor Confederates will get clothes. I have plenty of old ones for the present, but how are they to be renewed? And that is the condition of many others. I do not think there are manufactories sufficient in the Confederacy to supply the demand; and, as all the men are engrossed by the war, the women will have to engage in the business. Fayetteville or Stratford would be a fine position for a domestic manufactory. When you go to see your grandpa, consult him about it. I am glad to hear that he is well, and hope that he will not let these disjointed times put him out of his usual way or give him inconvenience. I would not advise him to commence building at Broadneck, until he sees whether the enemy can be driven from the land, as they have a great fondness for destroying residences when they can do it without danger to themselves.. ....Do not let them get the precious baby, as he is so sweet, that they would be sure to eat him....Kiss Fitzhugh, (W. H. F. Lee), for me and the baby. That is the sweetest Christmas gift I can send them. I send you some sweet violets; I hope they will retain their fragrance till you receive them. I have just gathered them for you. The sun has set, and my eyes plead for relief, for they have had no rest this holy day. But my heart with all its strength

stretches toward you, and those with you, and hushes in silence its yearnings. God bless you, my daughter, you dear husband, and son! Give much love to your mamma, and may every blessing attend you all, prays your devoted father."

"Dabb's, June 22, 1862.

"I must take a part of this holy day, my dearest Chass, to thank you for your letter of the 14th. I am very glad that my communication after the battle reached you so opportunely, and relieved your anxiety about your Fitzhugh, (W. H. F. Lee). He has, since that, made a hazardous scout, and been protected by that Divine Providence, which, I trust and pray, may always smile on, as I know it will ever watch over, you and yours. I sent you some account of this expedition in a former letter, as well as the order of General Stuart on the subject. It was badly printed, but may serve to show that he conducted himself well. The general deals in the flowery style, as you will perceive if you ever see his report in detail; but he is a good soldier, and speaks highly of the conduct of the two Lees, who, as far as I can learn, deserve his encomiums. Your mamma is very zealous in her attentions to your sick brother. He is reported better. I think he was a few evenings since, when I saw him, and a note from her this morning states that he slowly improves. I hope he will soon be well again. He is much reduced and looks very feeble. I suppose he will be obliged to go to the 'North Carolina White Sulphur,' to keep you young women company. How will you like that? And now I must answer your inquiries about myself. My habiliments are not as

comfortable as yours, not so suited to this hot weather; but they are the best I have. My coat is of gray, of the regulation style and pattern, and my pants of dark blue, as is also prescribed, partly hid by my long boots. I have the same handsome hat which surmounts my gray head (the latter is not prescribed in the regulations), and shields my ugly face, which is masked by a white beard as stiff and wiry as the teeth of a card. In fact, an uglier person you have never seen, and so unattractive is it to our enemies that they shoot at it when ever visible to them. But, though age with its snow has whitened my head and its frost have stiffened my limbs, my heart, you well know, is not frozen to you, and summer returns when I see you. Having now answered your questions, I have little more to say. Our enemy is quitely working within his lines, and collecting additional forces to drive us from our capital. I hope we shall be able yet to disappoint him, and drive him back into his own country. I saw Fitzhugh, (W. H. F. Lee), the other day. He was looking very well in a new suit of gray."

This hasty note to his son, full of playful humor, is very interesting.

"My dear Fitzhugh, (W. H. F. Lee),.....I wrote you a few lines the other day and also to my daughter, Charlotte. Tell her she must talk quick to you. Her time is getting short, and the soldier's complain of the officers' wives visiting them when theirs cannot. I am petitioned to send them off. Your poor mother is, I fear, no better. I received yesterday a very pleasing letter from Rev. Dr.———, complimentary of preci-

ous ———; I have mailed it to your mother. Kiss Chass for me, and tell her that daughters are not prohibited from visiting their papas. It is only objected to wives visiting their husbands. But she and Mrs. R——— are not included in the prohibition. Your Uncle Carter says that they had him, with a gun and sword buckled to him, guarding a ford on James River during Stoneman's last expedition. You and Fitz must not let them capture your uncle. I wish I could have seen your review; I hope Chass did."

After his son had been wounded, he wrote these two notes—one to the son, the other to the daughter-in-law:

"My dear Son: I send you a dispatch received from C——— last night. I hope you are comfortable this morning. I wish I could see you, but I cannot. Take care of yourself, and make haste and get well, and return. Though I scarcely ever saw you, it was a great comfort to know that you were near and with me. I could think of you and hope to see you. May we meet yet in peace and happiness! Kiss Chass for me. Tell her she must not tease you while you are sick, and she must write and let me know how you are. God bless you both, my children."

"Culpeper, June 11, 1863.

"I am so grieved my dear daughter, to send Fitzhugh, (W. H. F. Lee), to you wounded. But I am so grateful that his wound is of a character to give us full hope of a speedy recovery. With his youth and strength to

aid him, and your tender care to nurse him, I trust he will soon be well again. I know that you will unite with me in thanks to Almighty God, who has so often shielded him in the hour of danger, for this recent deliverance, and lift up your whole heart in praise to Him for sparing a life so dear to us, while enabling him to do his duty in the station in which He had placed him. Ask him to join us in supplication, that He may always cover him with the shadow of his Almighty arms and teach him that his only refuge is in Him, the greatness of whose mercy reacheth unto the heavens, and His truth unto the clouds. As some good is always mixed with the evil in the world, you will now have him with you for a time, and I shall look to you to cure him very soon and send him back to me; for, though I saw him seldom, I knew he was near, and always hoped to see him. I went today to thank Mrs. Hill for her attention to him and kindness to you. She desired me to give her regards to you both. I must now thank you for the letter you wrote to me while at Fredericksburg. I kept it by me till preparing for the battlefield, when, fearing it might reach the eyes of General Hooker, I destroyed it. We can carry with us only our recollections. I must leave Fitzhugh to tell you about the battle, the army, and the country. . . ."

On hearing of the death of his infant granddaughter, he snatches a moment from his grave military duties, allows his horse to wait at the tent door, while he pens a few lines of tender sympathy:

"Camp Fredericksburg, 10th, December, 1862.

"I heard yesterday, my dear daughter, with the deepest sorrow, of the death of your infant. I was

so grateful at her birth. I felt that she would be such a comfort to you, such a pleasure to my dear Fitzhugh, and would fill so full the void still aching in your hearts. But now you have two sweet angels in heaven. What joy there is in the thought! What relief to your grief! What suffering and sorrow they have escaped! I can say nothing to soften the anguish you must feel, and I know you are assured of my deep and affectionate sympathy. May God give you strength to bear the affliction He has imposed, and produce future joy out of your present misery, is my earnest prayer.

"I saw Fitzhugh yesterday. He is well, and wants to see you. When you are strong enough, cannot you come to Hickory Hill, or your grandpa's, on a little visit? My horse is waiting at my tent door, but I could not refrain from sending these few lines, to recall to you the thought and love of your devoted father."

While his son was recovering from a wound, he was captured by a raiding party and taken to Fort Monroe. His wife died during his confinement. This letter was written to his son on his release and return to Richmond.

"Camp Orange County, April 24, 1864.

"I received last night, my dear son, your letter of the 22d. It has given me great comfort. God knows how I loved your dear, dear wife, how sweet her memory is to me, and how I mourn her loss. My grief could not be greater if you had been taken from me. You are both equally dear to me. My heart is too full to speak on this subject, nor can I write. But my grief is for ourselves, not for her. She is brighter

and happier than ever—safe from all evil, and awaiting us in our heavenly abode. May God in his Mercy enable us to join her in eternal praise to our Lord and Saviour. Let us humbly bow ourselves before Him, and offer perpetual prayer for pardon and forgiveness. But we cannot indulge in grief, however mournfully pleasing. Our country demands all our strength, all our energies. To resist the powerful combination now forming against us will require every man at his place. If victorious, we have everything to hope for in the future. If defeated, nothing will be left us to live for. I have not heard what action has been taken by the department in reference to my recommendations concerning the organization of the calvary. But we have no time to wait, and you had better join your brigade. This week will in all probability bring us active work, and we must strike fast and strong. My whole trust is in God, and I am ready for whatever he ordain. May He guide,guard, and strengthen us, is my constant prayer."

This letter was written only a few years after his marriage; it is addressed to one of his relatives in Alexandria, an old playfellow and schoolmate:

"St. Louis, 20th, August, 1838.

"My dear Cassius and Cousin, I believe I once spoke to you on the subject of getting for me the crest coat of arms, etc., of the Lee family, and which sure enough you never did. My object in making the request is for the purpose of having a seal cut with the impression of said coat, which I think is due from a man of my large family to his posterity, and which, I have thought, perhaps foolishly enough, might as

well be right as wrong. If therefore you can assist me in this laudable enterprise, I shall be much obliged, and by enveloping it securely, directed to me at this place, and sending it, either by mail or some safe hand, to Gen'l Gratiot, Eng. office, Washington City, without any word or further direction, it will come safely to hand. I once saw in the hands of cousin Edmund, for the only time in my life, our family tree, and as I begin in my old age to feel a little curiosity relative to my forefathers, their origin, whereabouts, etc., any information you can give me will increase the obligation. So sit down some of these hot evenings and write it off for me, or at any rate the substance, and tell my cousin Phillipa not to let you forget it. I wish you would at the same time undeceive her on a certain point, in which as I understand, she is laboring under a grievious error. Tell her it is the fartherest from my wish to detract from any of the little Lees, but as to her little boy being equal to Mr. Rooney, it is a thing not to be even supposed, much less believed, although in a credulous country where people stick at nothing from a coon story to a sea serpent! You must remember us particularly to her, to Uncle Edmund, Cousins Sally, Hannah and all the Lloyds.

"I believe I can tell you nothing doing here that would interest you, except that we are all well; although my Dame has been complaining for a day or two. The elections are all over. The Vanites have carried the day in the State, although the Whigs in this district carried their entire ticket, and you will have the pleasure of hearing the great expunger again thunder from his place in the Senate against banks, bribery and corruption, and what not.

"While on the river I cannot help being on the look out for that stream of gold that was to ascend the Mississippi, tied up in silk net purses! It would be a pretty sight, but the tide has not yet made up here. Let me know whether you can enlighten me on the point in question. And believe me, yours very truly.

"To C. F. Lee, Esqr., Alexandria, D. C."

In the recent memoir of General Lee, written by his nephew, General Fitzhugh Lee, a series of extracts are given from the General's letters to his wife. Throughout these letters, he constantly expresses anxiety for the sufferings of his soldiers from want of proper food and clothing. No one can read these extracts without perceiving one of the causes for the almost perfect adoration which his men had for "Marse Bob," as they were wont to style their commander.

Such expressions as these occur in letter after letter:....."We had quite a snow day before yesterday, and last night was very cold. It is thawing this morning, though the water was freezing as I washed. I fear it will bring much discomfort to our men who are barefooted and poorly clad. I can take but little pleasure in my comforts for thinking of them....."

"....The quartermaster received the things you sent. The mitts will be very serviceable. Make as many as you can obtain good material for. I have everything I want....."On returning from a visit to Richmond, he brought a bag of socks with him for his men, and wrote his wife: "I arrived safely yesterday. There are sixty-seven pairs of socks in

the bag I brought up instead of sixty four, as you supposed, and I found here three dozen pairs of beautiful white yarn socks, sent over by our kind cousin Julia and sweet little Carrie, making one hundred and three pairs; all of which I sent to the Stonewall brigade. One dozen of the Stuart socks had double heels. Can you not teach Mildred (his youngest daughter) that stitch? They sent me also some hams, which I had rather they had eaten. I pray that you may be preserved and relieved from all your troubles, and that we may all again be united here on earth and forever in heaven."

At another date: "Your note with the socks arrived last evening. I have sent them to the Stonewall brigade; the number all right—thirty pairs. Including this last parcel of thirty pairs, I have sent to that brigade two hundred and sixty three pairs. Still, there are about one hundred and forty whose homes are within the enemy's lines and who are without socks. I shall continue to furnish them till they are supplied. Tell the young women to work hard for the brave Stonewallers."..... A few weeks later: "Your note with the bag of socks reached me last evening. The number was correct—thirty one pairs. I have sent them to the Stonewall brigade, which is not yet supplied. Sixty one pairs from the ladies in Fauquier have reached Charlottesville and I hope will be distributed soon. Now that Miss Bettie Brander has come to the aid of my daughters, the supply will soon be increased."

From camp under date of 24th of January, 1864, he again wrote to his wife:

"I have had to disperse the cavalry as much as possible to obtain forage for their horses, and it is that which causes trouble. Provisions for men too,

are very scarce, and with very light diet and light clothing I fear they suffer; but still they are cheerful and uncomplaining. I received a report from one division the other day in which it was stated that over four hundred men were barefooted and over a thousand without blankets....."

So, too, some time later he wrote; "I received your letter some days ago, and last night your note accompanying a bag of gloves and socks and a bag of coffee. Mrs. Devereux sent the coffee to you, not me, and I shall have to send it back. It is so long since we have had the foreign bean that we no longer desire it. We have a domestic article, which we procure by the bushel, that answers very well. You must keep the good things for yourself. We have had to reduce our allowance of meat one half, and some days we have none. The gloves and socks are very acceptable, and I shall give them out this morning. The socks of Mrs. Shepherd are very nice, but I think it is better to give them to the soldiers than to dispose of them as you suggest. The soldiers are much in need. We have received some shoes lately, and the socks will be a great addition. Tell Life (his youngest daughter) I think I hear her needles rattle as they fly through the meshes."

In the winter of 1864 the following incident went the rounds of the Southern press:

"One very cold morning a young soldier on the cars to Petersburg was making fruitless efforts to put on his overcoat, with his arm in a sling. His teeth, as well as his sound arm, were brought into use to effect the object; but in the midst of his efforts an officer arose from his seat, advanced to him, and very carefully and tenderly assisted him, drawing the coat gently over his wounded arm, and

buttoning it comfortably; then, with a few kind and pleasant words, returned to his seat.

"Now the officer in question was not clad in gorgeous uniform, with a brilliant wreath upon the collar and a multitude of gilt lines upon the sleeves, resembling the famous labrynth of Crete, but he was clad in a 'simple suit of gray,' distinguished from the garb of a civilian only by the three stars which every Confederate General is, by the regulations, entitled to wear. And yet he was no other than our chief general, Robert E. Lee, who is not braver than he is good and modest."

General Fitzhugh Lee also gives this: "The cavalry, for the better subsistence of men and horses, had been moved back to Charlottesville for the winter, and, not having much to do, some of the officers proposed to dance. General Lee wrote to his son Robert, then belonging to that arm of the service, from Camp, Orange Court House, 17th January, 1864: 'I enclose a letter for you which has been sent to my care. I hope you are well and all around you. Tell Fitz I grieve over the hardships and sufferings of the men in their late expedition. I would have preferred his waiting for more favorable weather. He accomplished much under the circumstances, but would have done much more in favorable weather. I am afraid he was anxious to get back to the ball. This is a bad time for such things. We have two grave subjects on hand to engage in such trivial amusements. I would rather his officers should entertain themselves in fattening their horses, healing their men, and recruiting their regiments. There are too many Lees on the committee. I like them all to be present at battles, but can excuse them at balls.

But the saying is, 'Children will be children,' I think he had better move his camp farther from Charlottesville, and perhaps he will get more work and less play. He and I are too old for such assemblies. I want him to write me how his men are, his horses, and what I can do to fill up his ranks." (General Lee 324-5).

The Hon. B. H. Hill, in a speech, said:

"Lee sometimes indulged in satire, to which his greatness gave point and power. He was especially severe on newspaper criticisms of military movements—subjects about which the writers knew nothing.

" 'We made a great mistake, Mr. Hill, in the beginning of our struggle, and I fear, in spite of all we can do, it will prove to be a fatal mistake,' he said to me, after General Bragg had ceased to command the Army of Tennessee, an event Lee deplored.

" 'What mistake is that General?'

" 'Why Sir, in the beginning we appointed all our worst generals to command the armies and our best generals to edit the newspapers. As you know, I have planned some campaigns and quite a number of battles, I have given the work all the care and thought I could, and sometimes, when my plans were completed, as far as I could see, they seemed perfect. But when I have fought them through, I have discovered defects, and occasionally wondered I did not see some of them in advance. When it was all over I found by reading a newspaper that these best editor generals saw all the defects plainly from the start. Unfortunately, they did not communicate

their knowledge to me until it was too late.' Then after a pause, he added, with a beautiful grave expression I can never forget: 'I have no ambition but to serve the Confederacy, and do all I can to win our independence. I am willing to serve in any capacity to which the authorities may assign me. I have done the best I could in the field, and have not succeeded as I could wish. I am willing to yield my place to these best generals, and I will do my best for the cause editing a newspaper.'

"In the same strain he once remarked to one of his generals: 'Even as poor a soldier as I am can generally discover mistakes after it is all over. But if I could only induce these wise gentlemen who see them so clearly before hand to communicate with me in advance, instead of waiting until the evil has come upon us, to let me know what they knew all the time, it would be far better for my reputation and (what is of more consequence) far better for the cause.' "

"Upon one occasion, General Lee received a letter from some spirit-wrappers, asking his opinion on a certain great military movement. He wrote in reply, a most courteous letter, in which he said that the question was one about which military critics would differ; that his own judgment about such matters was but poor at best, and that inasmuch as they had the power to consult (through their mediums) Caesar, Alexander, Napoleon, Wellington, and all of the other great captains who have ever lived, he could not think of obtruding his opinion into such company."

Of the final scene in the great struggle, Horace Greeley has written:

"The parting of Lee with his devoted followers

was a sad one. Of the proud army, which, dating its victories from Bull Run, had driven McClellan from before Richmond, and withstood his best efforts at Antietam, and shattered Burnside's hosts at Fredericksburg, and worsted Hooker at Chancellorsville, and fought Meade so stoutly, though unsuccessfully, before Gettysburg, and baffled Grant's bountiful resources and desperate efforts in the Wilderness, at Spottsylvania, on the North Anna, at Cold Harbor, and before Petersburg and Richmond—a mere wreck remained. It is said that 27,000 men were included in Lee's capitulation; but of these not more than 10,000 had been able to carry their arms thus far in their hopeless and almost foodless flight." .....The men "crowded around their departing chief, who with streaming eyes, grasped and pressed their outstretched hands, at length finding words to say: 'Men, we have fought through the war together. I have done the best I could for you; my heart is too full to say more.'" His last official act was to request that all his private soldiers, who owned the horses they used, might be allowed to carry them home, "for the spring plowing;" so, to the last, was the commander thoughtful of the welfare of his men.

## FAREWELL ADDRESS TO THE ARMY.

General Orders

No. 9.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA.

---

Appomattox C. H., Apl. 10, 1865.

"After years of hard service, marked by unsurpassed courage and fortitude, the 'Army of Northern Virginia' has been compelled to yield to overwhelming numbers and resources.

"I need not tell the brave survivors of so many hard fought battles who have remained steadfast to the last, that I have consented to this result from no distrust of them, but feeling that valor and devotion could accomplish nothing that could compensate for the loss that must have attended a continuance of the contest, I determined to avoid the useless sacrifice of those whose past services have endeared them to their countrymen.

"By the terms of agreement, officers and men can return to their homes and there remain until exchanged. You will take with you the satisfaction that proceeds from a consciousness of duty faithfully performed, and I earnestly pray that a merciful God will extend to you his blessing and protection.

"With an unceasing admiration of your constancy and devotion to your countrymen and a grateful remembrance of your kind and generous consideration of myself, I bid you all an affectionate farewell.

R. E. LEE."

The war being over, what should General Lee do? He had no home, no fortune, no occupation. Numerous offers of high positions in various corporations, and such like business ventures, were made to him; but none were to his taste nor suited to his training. Finally, the trustees of Washington College offered him the presidency of that institution; the salary was small, the place insignificant, but a home in the mountains of Virginia suited his taste, and a desire to still be of use to his State in training her young men, decided him. He entered upon his duties there in October, 1865, and steadily performed them for five years. Then his discharge came.

Of his last illness and death, Colonel William Preston Johnston has written a most graphic account Colonel Johnston was a professor at the college, had been intimately associated with General Lee during the four years of their mutual service, and was a watcher at his death-bed.

"The death of General Lee was not due to any sudden cause, but was the result of agencies dating as far back as 1863. In the trying campaign of that year, he contracted a severe sore throat, that resulted in rheumatic inflamation of the sac inclosing the heart. There is no doubt that after this sickness his health was always more or less impaired; and, although he complained little, yet rapid exercise on foot or on horseback produced pain and difficulty of breathing. In October, 1869, he was again attacked by inflamation of the heart-sac, accompanied by muscular rheumatism of the back, right side and arms. The action of the heart was weakened by this attack; the flush upon his face was deepened, the rheuma-

tism increased, and he was troubled with weariness and depression.

"In March, 1870, General Lee yielding to the solicitations of friends and medical advisers, made a six week's visit to Georgia and Florida. He returned greatly benefited by the influence of the genial climate, the society of friends in those States, and the demonstrations of respect and affection of the people of the South; his physical condition, however, was not greatly improved. During this winter and spring he had said to his son, General Custis Lee, that his attack was mortal; and had virtually expressed the same belief to other trusted friends. And now, with what delicacy that pervaded all his actions, he seriously considered the question of resigning the presidency of Washington College, 'fearful that he might not be equal to his duties.' After listening, however, to the affectionate remonstrances of the faculty and board of trustees, who well knew the value of his wisdom in the supervision of the college, and the power of his mere presence and example upon the students, he resumed his labors with the resolution to remain at his post and carry forward the great work he had so auspiciously begun.

"During the summer he spent some weeks at the Hot Springs of Virginia, using the baths, and came home seemingly better in health and spirits. He entered upon the duties of the opening collegiate year in September with the quiet zeal and noiseless energy that marked all his actions, and an unusual elation was felt by those about him at the increased prospect that long years of usefulness and honor would yet be added to his glorious life.

"Wednesday the 28th of September, 1870, found

General Lee at the post of duty. In the morning he was fully occupied with the correspondence and other tasks incident to his office of President of Washington College, and he declined offers of assistance from members of the Faculty, of whose services he sometimes availed himself. After dinner, at four o'clock, he attended a vestry meeting of Grace (Episcopal) Church. The afternoon was chilly and wet, and a steady rain had set in, which did not cease until it had resulted in a great flood, the most memorable and destructive in this region for a hundred years. The church was rather cold and damp, and General Lee, during the meeting, sat in a pew with his military cape cast loosely about him. In a conversation that occupied the brief space preceding the call to order, he took part, and told, with marked cheerfulness and kindness of tone, some pleasant ancedote of Bishop Meade, and Chief Justice Marshall. The meeting was protracted until after seven o'clock, by a discussion touching a rebuilding of the church edifice and the increase of the rector's salary. General Lee acted as chairman, and, after hearing all that was said, gave his own opinion, as was his wont, briefly and without argument. He closed the meeting with a characteristic act. The amount required for the minister's salary still lacked a sum much greater than General Lee's proportion of the subscription, in view of his frequent and generous contributions to the church and other charities; but just before the adjournment, when the treasurer announced the amount of the deficit still remaining, General Lee said, in a lower tone: "I will give that sum.' He seemed tired towards the close of the meeting, and, as was afterward remarked, showed

an unusual flush, but at the time no apprehensions were felt.

"General Lee returned to his house, and finding his family waiting tea for him, took his place at the table, standing to say grace. The effort was vain, the lips could not utter the prayer of the heart. Finding himself unable to speak, he took his seat quietly and without agitation. His face seemed to some of the anxious group about him to wear a look of sublime resignation, and to evince a full knowledge that the hour had come when all the cares and anxieties of his crowded life were at an end. His physicians, Drs. H. T. Barton and R. L. Madison, arrived, promptly and applied the usual remedies, and placed him upon the couch, from which he was to arise no more. To him henceforth the things of this world were as nothing, and he bowed with resignation to the command of the Master he had followed so long with reverence.

'The symptoms of his attack resembled concussion of the brain without the attendant swoon. There were marked debility, a slightly impaired consciousness, and a tendency to doze; but no paralysis of motion or sensation, and no evidence of softening or inflamation of the brain. His physicians treated the case as one of venous congestion, and with apparently favorable results. Yet, despite these propitious auguries drawn from his physical symptoms, in view of the great mental strain he had undergone, the gravest fears were felt that the attack was mortal. He took without objection the medicine and diet prescribed, and was strong enough to turn in bed without aid, and sit up and take nourishment. During the earlier days of his illness, though inclined to

doze, he was easily aroused, was quite conscious and observant, evidently understood what was said to him, and answered questions briefly and intelligently; he was, however, averse to much speaking, generally using monosyllables, as had always been his habit when sick. When first attacked, he said to those who were removing his clothes, pointing at the same time to his rheumatic shoulder, 'You hurt my arm.' Although he seemed to be gradually improving until October the 10th, he apparently knew from the first that the appointed hour had come when he must enter those dark gates that, closing, reopen no more to earth. In the words of his physician, 'he neither expected nor desired to recover.' When General Custis Lee made some allusion to his recovery, he shook his head and pointed upward. On Monday morning before his death, Dr. Madison, finding him looking better, tried to cheer him: 'How do you feel today General?' General Lee replied slowly and distinctly: 'I feel better.' The doctor then said: 'You must make haste and get well; Traveller has been standing so long in the stable that he needs exercise.' The General made no reply, but slowly shook his head and closed his eyes. Several times during his illness he put aside his medicine, saying: 'It is of no use;' but yielded patiently to the wishes of his physicians or children, as if the slackened chords of being still responded to the touch of duty or affection.

"On October 10th, during the afternoon, his pulse became feeble and rapid, and his breathing hurried, With other evidences of great exhaustion. About midnight he was seized with a shivering of extreme debility, and Dr. Barton felt obliged to announce the danger to the family. On October the 11th, he was

evidently sinking; his respiration was hurried, and his pulse feeble and rapid. Though less observant, he still recognized whoever approached him, but refused to take anything unless presented by his physicians. It now became certain that the case was hopeless. His decline was rapid, yet gentle, and soon after nine o'clock, on the morning of October 12, he closed his eyes, and his soul passed peacefully from earth.

"General Lee's physicians attributed his death in great measure to moral causes. The strains of his campaigns, the bitterness of defeat, aggravated by the bad faith and insolence of the victor, sympathy with the subsequent sufferings of the Southern people, and the effort of calmness under these accumulated sorrows, seemed the sufficient and real causes that slowly but steadily undermined General Lee's health and led to his death. Yet to those who saw the composure under greater and lesser trials of life, and his justice and forbearance with the most unjust and uncharitable, it seemed scarcely credible that his serene soul was shaken by the evil that raged around him.

"General Lee's closing hours were consonant with his noble and disciplined life. Never was more beautifully displayed how a long and severe education of mind and character enables the soul to pass with equal step through the supreme ordeal; never did the habits and qualities of a lifetime, solemnly gathered into a few last sad hours, more grandly maintain themselves amid the gloom and shadow of approaching death. The reticence, the self-contained composure, the obedience to proper authority, the magnamnity, and the Christian meekness that mark-

ed all his actions, still preserved their sway, in spite of the inroads of desease, and the creeping legarthy that weighed down his faculties.

"As the old hero lay in the darkened room, or with the lamp and the hearth-fire casting shadows upon his calm, noble front, all the massive grandeur of his form, and face, and brow, remained; and death seemed to loose its terrors, and to borrow a grace and dignity in sublime keeping with the life that was ebbing away. The great mind sank to its last repose, almost with the equal poise of health. The few broken utterances that evinced at times a wandering intellect were spoken under the influence of the remedies administered; but as long as consciousness lasted there was evidence that all the high, controlling influences of his whole life still ruled; and even when stupor was laying its cold hand on the intellectual perceptions, the moral nature, with its complete orb of duties and affections, still asserted itself. A Southern poet has celebrated in song those last significant words, 'Strike the tent;' and a thousand voices were raised to give meaning to the uncertain sound, when the dying man said, with emphasis, 'Tell Hill he must come up!' These sentences serve to show most touchingly through what fields the imagination was passing; but generally his words, though few, were coherent; but for the most part indeed his silence was unbroken.

"This self-contained reticence had an awful grandeur, in solemn accord with a life that needed no defense. Deeds which required no justification must speak for him. His voiceless lips, like the shutgate of some majestic temple, were closed, not for concealment, but because that within was holy. Could the

eye of the mourning watcher have pierced the gloom that gathered about the recesses of that great soul, it would have perceived a Presence there full of an effable glory. Leaning trustfully upon the all-sustaining Arm, the man whose stature, measured by mortal standards, seemed so great, passed from this world of shadows to the realities of the hereafter."

**Mary Ann Randolph Custis Lee.**

General Lee married Mary Anne Randolph Custis, the only daughter of George Washington Parke Custis and Mary Lee Fitzhugh, his wife. Mary Custis was born at Arlington, the 1st of October, 1808, and died at her home in Lexington, the 5th of No-

vember, 1873. She was buried in the College Chapel, with her daughter, Agnes, and her husband.

Of his wedding let another speak: "He was in love from boyhood. Fate brought him to the feet of one who, by birth, education, position, and family tradition, was best suited to be his life companion. They had known each other when she was a child at Arlington and he, a young boy in Alexandria, some eight miles away. It is said she met and admired him when he came back to Alexandria on a furlough from the Military Academy. It was the first time anyone in that vicinity had seen him in his cadet uniform. He was handsomer than ever; straight, erect, symmetrical in form, with a finely shaped head on a pair of broad shoulders. He was then twenty years old, and a fine specimen of a West Point cadet on leave of absence. The impressions produced were of an enduring nature, and the officer, upon graduation, followed up the advantage gained by the attractive cadet.

"G. W. P. Custis was the adopted son of Washington, and the grandson of Mrs. Washington. Lee was, therefore, to marry a great grand-daughter of Mrs. Washington, and was a fortunate man, not so much, perhaps, from these ties, but because of the great qualities of head and heart possessed by Mary Custis, his affianced bride. It is difficult to say whether she was more lovely on that memorable June evening, when the Rev. Mr. Keith asked her, Wilt thou take this man to be thy wedded husband?' or after many years had passed, and she was seated in her large arm-chair in Richmond, almost unable to move from chronic rheumatism, but busily engaged in knitting socks for the sockless Confederate soldiers. The public notice of the marriage was short:

"Married, 30th, June, 1831, at Arlington House, by the Rev. Mr. Keith, Lieutenant Robert E. Lee, of the United States Corps of Engineers, to Miss Mary A. R. Custis, the only daughter of G. W. P. Custis, Esq."

"Beautiful old Arlington was in all her glory that night. The stately mansion never held a happier assemblage. 'Its broad portico and wide spread wings held out open arms, as it were, to welcome the coming guests. Its simple Doric columns graced domestic comforts with a classic air. Its halls and chambers were adorned with the patriots and heroes, and with illustrations and relics of the great Revolution and of the 'Father of his Country.' Without and within history and tradition seemed to

breathe their legends upon a canvass as soft as a dream of peace."

The bridal attendants, on this occasion, consisted of: First, Miss Catherine Mason and Lieutenant Sydney Smith Lee; second, Miss Mary Goldsborough and Lieutenant Thomas Kennedy; third, Miss Marietta Turner and Lieutenant Chambers; fourth, Miss Angela Lewis and Mr. Tilman; fifth, Miss Julia Calvert and Lieutenant Prentiss; sixth, Miss Britannia Peter and Lieutenant Thomas Turner. This wedding occurred before the fashion of "wedding trips" came into vogue; the festivities of the evening were concluded by a handsome supper, and were continued until the evening of the following Monday (the wedding took place on Thursday).

For many years prior to her death, Mrs. Lee suffered extremely from chronic rheumatism which crippled her so much that she could scarcely use her hands, and confined her for years to the chair of an invalid. Yet no one could have been more cheerful or less complaining. In a letter to the late Cassius F. Lee, Sr., under the date of 3d of January, 1872, she wrote of herself: "I have been intending my dear Cassius, ever since your son Edmund came, to write to you and tell you how pleased we were to see him; but a long and severe attack of rheumatism has prevented my writing. I can only write a few lines at a time, and even now I can scarcely use my pen at all. He lives quite near us and looks remarkably well and Custis tells me is doing well, is quite studious. He comes to see us often and always looks bright and cheerful. I do hope he will fulfill all your hopes and expectations. You must give our loves to his mother and all your family. I hope you all have enjoyed

this Christmas and New Year. It has been an unusually sad one to me. Besides my painful sickness, during that time Fitzhugh lost his youngest child of whooping-cough, a lovely little girl of one year old, whom I had been looking forward to enjoy so much this winter when I expected to go down. I do not think in all my life I ever endured so tedious and painful an attack of illness and you will see since this illness, I can scarcely use my pen at all....

"The weather is so uncomfortable, that I have relinquished all idea of going to the White House. Agnes and Mildred went there from Bob's wedding; Mildred has been suffering much from a sprained ankle, which still continues. Mary and Custis alone are with me here. We read the genealogical book but could not add anything to it. It was much fuller than anything we have, which is mostly obtained from that letter of Mr. Thomas (William) Lee. We have all been much disappointed at the delay in bringing out the 'Memorial' volume and fear it will not be any advantage to its circulation. Mary says that she has no doubt that my aunt, Mrs. Fitzhugh, could tell you all about the connection of Fitzhughs and Lees; tell her, if you should see her, that I am waiting to get my hand steadier before writing to her. What about Arlington? Can anything be done this winter? I feel so weak and miserable that the things of earth seem passing away and loosing their value and interest. I suppose, though, if God should restore me to my wonted health, the interest would return. I do not think I could write another line. Tell me of my friends, of your daughters and all. Especial love to Dr. Packard. Yours affectionately."

General Robert E. Lee had the following named children:

I—George Washington Custis 7. See page 311.

II—Mary Custis 7, born at Arlington, 1834. Unmarried. Now traveling in Europe.

III—William Henry Fitzhugh 7. See page 315.

IV—Anne Carter 7, born at Arlington, the 18th of June, 1839; died at the White Sulphur Springs, Warren County, North Carolina, the 20th of October, 1862. A beautiful monument has been erected over her grave by the citizens of Warren County; it was unveiled with appropriate ceremony, the 18th of August, 1866. General Lee was obliged to deny himself the mournful satisfaction of being present at the dedication. He wrote to the ladies having it in charge: ".....I do not know how to express to you my thanks for your great kindness to her while living, and for your affectionate remembrance of her since dead. I have always cherished the intention of visiting the tomb of her, who never gave me aught but pleasure, but to afford me the satisfaction which I crave, it must be done with more privacy than I can hope for on the occasion you propose."

V—Eleanor Agnes 7, born at "Arlington," about 1842; died at Lexington, 15th October, 1873, and buried with her father and mother.

VI—Robert Edward 7. See page 328.

VII—Mildred Childe, died unmarried at New Orleans, La., March 28, 1905. Buried at Lexington, Va., with her father, mother and sister Eleanor Agnes.

**Richard Bland Lee.**

Richard Bland 6, second child of Richard Bland 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at "Sully," Fairfax County, July 20, 1797, died at Alexandria, August 2, 1875, he married, November 23, 1826, Julia, daughter of William Prosser, of "White Marsh," in Gloucester County. He entered the Military Academy at West Point, May 7th, 1814, and graduated, July 17th, 1817, ninth in a class of thirty graduates; he was appointed third lieutenant, November 24th, 1817; first lieutenant third artillery, on the reorganization of the army, June 1st, 1821, brevet captain, for ten years faithful service in one grade, October 31st, 1829. During these years, he had been stationed on garrison duty at various forts, and at the school of artillery practice. He was invited by General Cass, then Secretary of War, to take charge, as military conductor, of the caravan of Santa Fe traders, to ascertain the condition of the tribes of Indians occupying the Rocky Mountains, and to arrange some method of communication between them and the government. Having conducted the caravan to Santa Fe, through roving bands of hostile Indians, and finding at that place no means of communication with the tribes, nor of obtaining reliable information as to their condition, at his own expense, he raised and equipped a party for the first attempt at a winter exploration of the mountains; an undertaking then considered by the most experienced hunters as very impracticable. On November 15th, 1832, he penetrated the northern portion of New Mexico, and explored the extensive regions of the head waters of the Rio del Norte to the South Park, and as far west as the base of Salt Mountain;

Crossed the Green River near its entrance to the great canon. Thence, through the valley of the Green River, across the spur of mountains to the confluence of the Little Snake and Little Bear Rivers, both of which he explored to their head-waters. Near the head of Little Snake River, he crossed the grand divide of the eastern and western waters, striking Sweet Water River near the South Pass to great Salt Lake, and near the base of Wind River Mountain. Thence across the Platte and Medicine Bow Rivers, watering the valleys of the Black Hills, and the eastern slope of the mountains, and crossing several forks of the Platte and Arkansaw Rivers, he reached Sante Fe, via Toas, on June 15th, 1833. He had, in the period of seven months, explored an area over 1,200 miles in extent, visited six tribes of Indians, with whom he entered into friendly relations, and arranged plans of communicating between them and the government.

On the outbreak of the "Florida War" against the Seminole Indians, Richard Bland Lee entered the field as first lieutenant, and served successively with Generals Clinch and Scott, and Governor Call. During these campaigns, he saw more active service, was under more fire, and lost more men, killed and wounded, than any officer who served with those armies. General Clinch, on retiring from command, wrote him a complimentary letter of thanks. He was selected by General Scott to command the storming party, who were to force the passage of the Withlacooche; his party were, on this occasion, the only portion of the troops under fire: for his gallant conduct in this attack, he received the commendations of the General in the presence of the army. Under

Governor Call, he was assigned to the command of Fort Micanopy, the most important barrier between the Indians and the settlers; while in command there, he had three successful encounters with the Indians led by Oceola in person. Was brevetted Major "for gallantry and good conduct," June 9th, 1836; was twice wounded and in consequence compelled to leave Florida. Governor Call wrote him a letter of thanks for his efficient services while serving in Florida.

Upon reaching Washington, by appointment of the President and in the presence of the Secretary of War, the General-in-chief, and several officers invited for the occasion, he received the compliments of President Jackson, who declared that his fights in front of Fort Micanopy were the most creditable events of the war. At the beginning of the Mexican War, Major Lee offered his services to the commissary general to take the field; but General Gibson declined the offer, preferring that he should remain on duty at St. Louis, where he could be more useful. For several years, he served as chief commissary for the Pacific division; part of the time on special service in California and Oregan. He explored the region from the head of Puget Sound to the mouth of Columbia River: also the country from San Francisco between the Coast Range and the ocean, to the boundary of Mexico, near the head of the Gulf of California. Having arranged a system of supply in accordance with General Persifer Smith's views, he was directed to visit the Sandwich Islands, to purchase supplies, and thence to the South American States on the Pacific. Upon returning to Washington, after completing these duties, he was com-

plimented by General Gibson for the satisfactory manner in which he had accomplished his work.

When Virginia seceded, Major Lee resigned from the army, May 9th, 1861 and was appointed a lieutenant-colonel in the commissariat of the Confederate service; took an active part in the battle of Shiloh, under General Beauregard, where he had his horse shot under him.

He married Julia Anne Marion (Prosser) and had twelve children, three of whom died young. The other nine are:

I—Mary Elizabeth 7, born August 19, 1827, at "White Marsh," who married Dr. Robert Fleming and had six children.

II—Julia Eustis 7, no data.

III—Evelina Prosser 7, born September 24, 1832, at St. Louis, Mo., married Edwin Cecil Morgan, at Washington, D. C., July 14th, 1853, and had six children.

IV—Richard Bland 7, born at Fortress Monroe, Va., August 9, 1835, and is now living at Buckland Hall, Prince William County, Va. March 16, 1865, he married Mary Alice Butt, and by her had six children:

(1) Richard Bland 8, born in Howard County, Md., April 15, 1867; married, January 3, 1911, Gertrude M. (Harvey) Arnold, widow of Capt. C. H. Arnold, Jr., U. S. A. They are now living in New York City.

(2) Francis Morris 8, born in Alexandria, Va., January 18, 1869; married, October 25, 1899, Catherine Valentine Tabb, of Gloucester County, Va., and by her had three children, Francis Morris 9, Catherine Valentine 9, and Richard Henry Allen 9. They

are now living at Green Spring Valley, Baltimore County, Md.,

(3) Robert McCoskey 8, born at Buckland Hall, Va., February 14, 1871, died unmarried in Montana, March 17, 1894.

(4) Mary Elizabeth 8, born at Buckland Hall, Va., August 12, 1873. She is unmarried and living in New York City.

(5) Philip Henry 8, born at Buckland Hall, Va., March 20, 1877; unmarried and lives in New York City.

(6) George Allen 8, born at Buckland Hall, Va., February 8, 1880, unmarried and lives in New York City.

V—Anna Cornelia 7, born December 19, 1865, married, Dr. Robert Stockton Johnston Peebles, and had three children.

VI—Julia Prosser 7, born February 27, 1840, married Meta Wallace Weaver, June 21, 1871. He served in the Confederate Army rising to the rank of Captain. They had five children.

VII—Myra Gaines 7, born November 9, 1841, married Charles Napoleon Civalier, of France, and had four children.

VIII—William Augustus 7, born in St. Louis, January 30, 1846. Studied medicine and graduated from the medical college of Richmond, Virginia, in 1870. Died unmarried in Richmond, Va., November 29, 1906, and buried in Hollywood. When only sixteen years of age, he entered the Confederate Navy as Midshipman and was present at the battle of Fort Fisher and took part in the fight off Wilmington, N. C. He was one of the officers detailed to

escort President Davis, south at the evacuation of Richmond.

IX—Robert Fleming 7, born in St. Louis, February 13, 1849, and is now living unmarried in Richmond, Va. When fifteen years of age entered the army with the Lexington Cadets and was present at the battle of Lynchburg and later saw service around Richmond.

**Zaccheus Collins Lee.**

Zaccheus Collins 6, sixth child of Richard Bland 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born December 5th, 1805, died, Baltimore, Md., November 26, 1859, he was educated at the University of Virginia and studied law under William Wirt. Practiced at Baltimore and was U. S. District Atty., from 1848 to 1855. Was Judge of the Superior Court of Baltimore from 1855, to his death. Married, June 15, 1837, Martha Anne, daughter of Thomas C. Jenkins, and had two children.

I—Richard Henry 7, born, Baltimore, Md., April 29, 1839, and died March 20th, 1883. Married Belle Isabell Wilson, October, 1868. Served as a private in the Confederate Army. Had four children.

Elizabeth Collins 8, unmarried; Richard Henry 8, unmarried; Zaccheus Collins 8, unmarried and Robert Edward 8, born in 1883 and died, 1890.

II—Mary Elizabeth 7, born November 5, 1840. Married first, Wm. B. Perine, December 26, 1861, he died, May, 1863, and August 15, 1867, she married Bernard John Cooper, of the English Navy. Died in Rome, Italy, April 8, 1904. Buried in St. Lerenzo Cemetery in that city.

III—Mary Ida 7, died when six months old.

**Edmund Jennings Lee.**

Edmunds Jennings 6, first child of Edmund Jennings 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Alexandria, May 3d, 1797, and died at "Leeland," near Shepherdstown, W. Va., August 10, 1877. Mr. Lee was a graduate of Princeton and studied law with his father at Alexandria, he became a prominent lawyer, and well known throughout his section of the State, where for many years he enjoyed a large and lucrative practice. He possessed fine abilities, strong native sense, clear, sound judgment, was of a genial, charitable disposition and of exalted moral character. He was diligent in attending to the various duties of life, and, being well

equipped for the work of his profession, and proverbially attentive to the interests of his clients, it is not surprising that he held their confidence and esteem. He never entered public life, although frequently solicited to do so. Though like many others of his family and State, he was opposed to secession, he was later an ardent and warm supporter of the Southern cause. Being too far advanced in years to enter the army, he remained quietly and unobtrusively at home. During a temporary absence his own residence and that of his wife's nearby were burned to the ground.

Mr. Lee first married on October 10, 1823, Eliza Shepherd and had two children.

I—Ellen 7, born September 23, 1824, married, September 19, 1844, John Sims Powell, of Loudoun Co.

II—Charles Shepherd Lee 7, born at Wheeling, W. Va., September 17, 1826. He resided on his farm in Berkeley County (now West Virginia) until the war between the States. Owing to a gunshot in the knee, received when eighteen years of age, he could not go into active service in the war. After the war, he moved with his family to Clark County, where he is still living, (1911) a remarkably active man, with all his faculties, in his eighty-fifth year. May 16, 1849, he married Margaret H. Page, of Clark County, Va., and had:

(1) Margaret Page 8, born at "Norwood," near Martinsburg, W. Va., August 24, 1851, married, December 22, 1875, Chas. Canby Garrett, of Wilmington, Del., now living in Baltimore, Md., and had Margaret Lee 9, born at Anchorage, October 13, 1876, married Richard H. Chamberlaine; Charlotte Grushaw 9, born at Wilmington, Del., December 2, 1878,

and Edmonia Louise 9, born Baltimore, Md., March 15, 1891.

(2) Charles Randolph 8, born at "Norwood," near Martinsburg, W. Va., July 21, 1853, married Minnie Swiggett, of Wilmington, Del., and had one daughter, Charlotte Dunning 9.

(3) Edmonia Louise 8, born "Highland," near Martinsburg, W. Va., March 5, 1861, married, April 17, 18—, William Haigh, Esq., of Isle of Wright, England, lived in Clark County, Va., died April 13, 18—, no issue.

(4) Ellen Byrd 8, born at "Mansfield," near Berryville, Va., March 16, 1864. Lives with her father at "Anchorage," in Clark County.

(5) Phillips Fitzgerald 8, born at "Anchorage," near Berryville, Va., August 31, 1866, married Laura Gabrielle Duval, of Maryland, and had Phillips Fitzgerald 9, born Norfolk, Va., June 20, 1904.

(6) Nannie Goldsborough 8, born at "Anchorage," May 25, 1868, married Alexander Cuthcart Coble, of Carlisle, Pa., and has one son, Alexander Cuthcart 9, born at Winchester, Va., December 6, 1891.

(7) Edwin Gray 8, born at "Anchorage," May 8, 1870, married Elizabeth Parker Nash, of Norfolk, Va., and had Margaret Page 9, born at Norfolk, Va., February 20, 1902; and Herbert Nash 9, born, Norfolk, Va., September 30, 1903, died in Norfolk, April, 1908.

(8) Mann Randolph Page 8, born at "Anchorage," May 16, 1872, lives unmarried in Norfolk, Va.

(9) Eliza Holmes 8, born at "Anchorage," February 29, 1874, lives with her father in Clark County, Va.

On September 7, 1835, he married Henrietta Bedinger and had five children:

III—Edwin Gray 7. See page 331.

IV—Ida 7, born at "Leeland," Jefferson Co., W. Va., August 14, 1840, married September 19, 1860, Col. Armstead Thompson Mason Rust, of Loudoun Co., Va., and had eleven children.

V—Henrietta Edmonia 7, born at "Leeland," February 28, 1844, married November 7, 1865, Dr. Charles W. Goldsborough and had issue.

VI—Edmund Jennings 7. See page 332.

VII—Henry Bedinger 7, born at Leeland, July 14, 1849. On September 20th, 1877, married Lucy Johnson Marshall, of Fauquier County, and had eight children:

(1) Francis Ambler 8, born August 30, 1878, died August 21, 1879.

(2) Henry Bedinger 8, born January 22, 1880, married, June 8, 1904, Sue Kent Rust, and had Mary Nelson 9, born December 17, 1906.

(3) Claude Marshall 8, born June 17, 1882, married, December 20, 1905, Mary Willoughby Duke Slaughter, and had Martha Eskridge 9, born in China, November 8, 1906; Mary Willoughby 9, born in China, September 16, 1908, and Lucy Ambler 9, born in China, January, 1910.

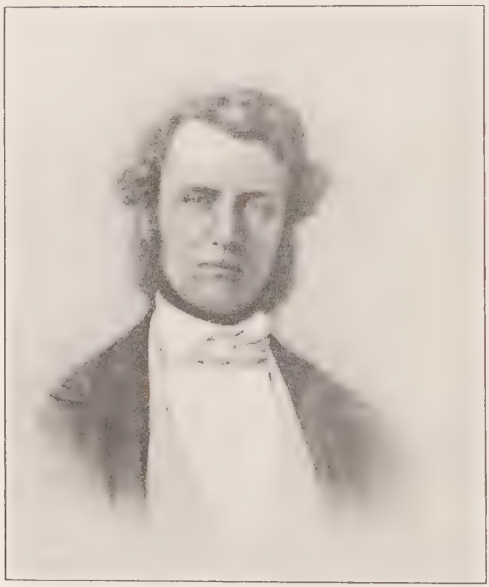
(4) Rebecca Rust 8, born July 31, 1884.

(5) Edwin Gray 8, born November 7, 1890, married, June 28, 1910, Estell Marshall Behrendt, and had Elizabeth Marshall 9, who lived only three weeks.

(6) James Keith Marshall 8, born May 28, 1893.

(7) Richard Henry 8, born August 4, 1897.

(8) Lucy Marshall 8, born February 21, 1901.



**Cassius Francis Lee.**

Cassius Francis Lee 6, sixth child of Edmund Jennings 5, (Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born at Alexandria, Va., May 22, 1808 and died there January 23d, 1890. He was a lawyer, but never practiced, he served for a time as clerk of the U. S. Courts and later entered the mercantile house of Caznove & Co. He was an ardent worker and consistent member of the Episcopal Church and at his death the Southern Churchman published under date of January 30, 1890:

"On Thursday last, this venerable and beloved man passed from earth into the everlasting blessedness of the saints. We had not heard of his sickness,

therefore his death was unexpected, though it ought not to have been, he having passed the age allotted to men. We cannot trust ourselves to speak of his long and consistent Christian life, and of that long life devoted to the interests and welfare of the church in this diocese. For many years before the war, as treasurer of the Theological Seminary and treasurer of the Virginia Educational Society, he gave his thoughts, his affections, his time to the Seminary without compensation. After the war, his pecuniary circumstances having changed, a small salary was given him, which he more than earned, giving nearly all his time to the Educational Society and to the care and interest of the Seminary. While his health had failed during the past few years, he was already deeply interested in its welfare, full of zeal for its good, and died treasurer of both. He will be missed, not only by his sons, daughters, and grandchildren, but by the professors and students and by his many friends, and by the church of this diocese. His co-workers on the boards of trustees will miss him; he was always so deeply concerned and so earnestly at work for good. His Christian character, his pious zeal his love for what was true and just and honorable—of these no one can speak in adequate terms. His light shone unconscious to himself, and that light was bright and beautiful and affectionate. .....He lived the Christian life and died the Christian death, full of the respect of all who knew him. While we sympathize with this diocese, we rejoice that such a man lived in it and died in it. His memory—let it continue precious.... He was indentified with Christ Church (Alexandria) as far back as 1833, and for years represented that

parish in the annual councils, and was one of the lay deputies to the General Convention, held at Cincinnati; he was a member of the Standing Committee of this diocese for over a third of a century.....In his work, whether as a merchant, citizen, or in any work connected with the Church, he was active and indefatigable, as those who were associated with him can testify. His end was somewhat sudden. On the Sunday previous to his death he did not go to church, though he was up and about the house. That afternoon a member of his family read to him Dr. Slaughter's Memorial of the Rev. G. A. Smith, to which he listened with interest. The day following Bishop Talbot, of Wyoming, was at Christ Church and delivered an address on his missionary work, and afterward called to see Mr. Lee, who was gratified and pleased to see the Bishop. That night he retired to bed as usual, but never rose therefrom, the sudden change taking place on Thursday, and before noon his spirit had passed away. On Saturday he was buried from Christ Church, and at the funeral the hymn sung was that which he loved to repeat, and which was his favorite hymn:

"Just as I am, without one plea,
But that thy blood was shed for me,
And that Thou bidd'st me come to Thee,
O. Lamb of God, I come."

Cassius F. Lee married, September 18, 1833, Hannah Phillipa Ludwell Hopkins, and by her had five children:

I—Cornelia 7, born November 27, 1835, and died unmarried, June 24, 1890.

II—William Ludwell 7, born March 28, 1838, and died at Alexandria, unmarried, May 10, 1858.

III—Harriotte Hopkins 7, born April 15, 1840, married, November 28, 1860, Thomas Seldon Taliaferro, of Gloucester County, Va., and had issue.

IV—Sarah 7, born January 6, 1842. Resides in Leesburg, Va., unmarried and is engaged in literary work.

V—Cassius Frances 7, born at Alexandria, Va., January 4, 1844 and died there September 14, 1892, married, May 29, 1873, Mary Lloyd and had two daughters.

Mr. Lee married secondly, April 15, 1846, Anne Eliza Gardner, and had seven children:

VI—Phillipa 7, born March 8, 1847, and died December 24, 1853.

VII—Constance Gardner 7, born October 29, 1848, died August 8, 1877. She married, October 29, 1868, Rev. George William Peterkin and had issue.

VIII—Caznove Gardner 7, born at Alexandria, May 30, 1850, is now living in Washington, D. C. Married, September 20, 1881, Marguerite L. Dupont, and had: Caznove Gardner 8, and Maurice Dupont 8.

IX—Francis Dupont 7, born at Alexandria, Va., January 3, 1852, died in Fairfax County, June 14, 1891, married, April 28, 1880, Anne Henderson Taylor and had three children, two sons who died young, and Constance C. Lee 8.

X—Edmund Jennings 7, born at Alexandria, June 16, 1853, married, December 9, 1879, May Emma Smith and had four children: Constance Gardner 8, who married, 1908, Louis De Pastor of the Spanish Legation and in now stationed in China; Charles

Smith 8, Mildred Washington 8, and Florence Friescen 8.

XI—William Gardner 7, born June 27, 1855, and died in three days.

XII—Annie Eliza 7, born October 23, 1861, married, April 28, 1886, Rev. John Thompson Cole and had children.

### Richard Henry Lee.

Richard Henry 6, eldest child of Ludwell 5, (Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), born June 23, 1795, and died at Washington, Pa., January 3, 1865.

He was twice married and had issue by each marriage. Mr. Lee was educated at Dickinson College, Pa., where he graduated with the honors of his class. He then studied law with the late Judge Thomas Duncan, of Carlisle, Pa., and began the practice of his profession in Loudoun County. While residing at Leesburg, he edited the Memors of his grandfather, Richard Henry Lee, and of his great uncle, Dr. Arthur Lee, which were issued in 1825 and 1829 respectively. He was also at one time Mayor of Leesburg. Mr. Lee was a scholar, especially accomplished in classical literature and belles-letters; he read Greek and Latin authors with ease, and, having a fine memory, treasured up their beauties for frequent reference. In 1833 he was called to the Chair of Languages in Washington College, Pennsylvania, and in 1837 was transferred to that of Belles-Letters. During his occupancy of these professorships he continued the practice of law. But in 1854 he gave up the law and resigned his professorship to begin the

study of theology, with a view to entering the ministry of the Episcopal Church, which he did in 1858, and assumed charge of Trinity Church, Washington, Pa. He was in charge of that church at the time of his death.

By his first wife, Mary Duncan Mahone, he had four children:

I—Mary Ann 7, who married Isaac Winston, and left no issue.

II—Flora 7, died unmarried.

III—Richard Henry 7, died in infancy.

IV—Frances Hayne 7, married Isaac Winston, had no issue. By his second wife Anna Eden Jordan he had five children.

V—Samuel A, 7, died in infancy.

VI—Richard Henry 7, born at Leesburg, Va., died at Lewiston, Pa., married Mary Wilson, and left two children.

VII—Phillip Ludwell 7, born 1835, died unmarried, 1889. Was Captain in the U. S. Army.

VIII—John Lewellyn 7, born 1838, died 1870.

IX—Francis Lightfoot 7, born at Washington, Pa., in 1840, died May 24, 1881, and left no issue.

## SEVENTH GENERATION.

**Blair Lee.**

BLAIR 7, only child of Samuel Phillips 6, (Francis Lightfoot 5, Richard Henry 4, Thomas 3, Richard 2, Richard 1,) born at Silver Spring, Md., August 9, 1857, where he now resides.

He graduated at Princeton in 1880 and studied law at the Columbian University, and in the office of Reginald Fendall. Was admitted to the bar in Montgomery County, Md., and the District of Columbia in 1883, since which time he has been active in the practice of his profession and has taken a prominent part

in the politics of Maryland. He was a candidate for Congress in 1896 from the 6th Maryland District on the Democratic ticket, but the District being usually Republican, he was defeated. In 1905 he was a candidate for State Senator from Montgomery County, and after a vigorous contest was nominated and elected. In 1909 he was re-elected to the State Senate being the first person to serve two consecutive terms from that county. In 1911 he was a candidate for the Democratic nomination for Governor of Maryland under the popular primary election law of that State and after a close and hotly contested campaign was defeated, the vote in the convention being 64 to 65. During his service in the Maryland State Senate he has taken an active part in Legislation and debate and is the author of a number of important Laws passed during that period.

**Anne Clymer (Brooks) Lee.**

Blair Lee, married Anne Clymer Brooks, October 1st, 1891. She died December 24, 1903, and is buried in Rock Creek Cemetery, D. C.

By her he had three children.

I—Edward Brooks Lee 8, born October 23, 1892, now a student at College.

II—Phillips Blair Lee 8, born December 27, 1895, also a student at college.

III—Arthur Fitzgerald Lee 8, born 1899, died in his sixth year and is buried in Rock Creek Cemetery, D. C.

**Fitzhugh Lee.**

Fitzhugh 7, eldest child of Sidney Smith 6, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1,) born at "Clermont," Fairfax County, November 19, 1835. When sixteen he entered the Military Academy at West Point, where he was graduated in July, 1865, and at the head of his class in horsemanship, and was appointed second lieutenant in the famous old Second Cavalry, which regiment furnished so many officers afterward distinguished in the civil war. His first important duty was drilling and discipling raw recruits at the Carlisle Barracks, in Pennsyl-

vania, where he gave evidence of ability in organizing troops. It was probably the ability shown on this duty that led to his being appointed, a few years later, an instructor of cavalry at West Point. After leaving Carlisle, Lieutenant Lee served upon the frontier against the Indians. The following sketch of "Fitzhugh Lee as an Indian fighter," from the pen of an old army comrade, is of interest, telling both of the adventures of the subject of this sketch, and giving the experience of the soldiers on the "plains" in a species of warfare now happily past.

"In 1859, I was a bugler of 'B' Company of the 2nd. U. S. Cavalry (now the 5th), having enlisted in the army at the age of thirteen years. The officers of the company were: Captain, E. Kirby Smith; 1st Lieutenant, Walter Jenifer, and 2nd Lieutenant, Fitzhugh Lee.

"At the time of which I write, the company formed a part of the Wichita expedition, composed of six companies of the 2d Cavalry and commanded by Brevet Major, Earl Van Dorn, Captain 2d Cavalry; Lieut. Lee acting as Adjutant. This expedition was organized for the purpose of operating against the main villages of the hostile Indians, whose depredations on the people of Texas had become unbearable. These Indians, leaving their families and villages in the far distant Indian Territory, would form into small bands and, penetrating into the very heart of the settlements, murder men, women, and children, and return in comparative safety to their villages with their spoils of scalps and horses. The few mounted troops in Texas at that time were widely scattered, the posts being from 100 to 150 miles apart, and although the officers and men were ever

on the alert, still the Indians' knowledge of the country, their plainscraft and ability to travel night and day, gave them a great advantage over the soldiers, and made the chance of overtaking and punishing them very uncertain. The object of the expedition, then, was to strike the large bands congregated in their villages, give them a chastisement they would not soon forget, and thereby put an end to the depredations on the people of Texas.....

"The approach to the Indians' stronghold could only be made on foot and in open or skirmish order, as the undergrowth was so thick as to be almost impenetrable. Several charges were made, one being led by Major Van Dorn in person, but all were forced back, due as much to the obstacles they encountered as to the fire of the Indians.

At this juncture Lieut. Lee asked permission to lead a charge against one of the flanks of the Indians position, which was granted, and resulted in the capture of a large number of women and children and a few warriors, who were mixed up with them. In a second charge he struck the Indians within a few yards of their main body, and a desperate encounter ensued. In pressing forward in advance of his men, Lieut. Lee came face to face with an Indian brave. He raised his pistol, the Indian drew his bow and both fired at the same instant. The lieutenant's bullet struck the Indian squarely between the eyes and the Indian's arrow entered his right side under his extended arm, and, passing between the ribs, penetrated the right lung. The force and shock of the wound caused Lieut. Lee to stager for support against a tree, whence he was assisted to a place of safety by his men. It was at this time that Major

Van Dorn was made aware of Lieut. Lee's accident, and, taking me with him, hastened to where he lay stretched on the ground in an apparently dying condition. He motioned me to him, and I sat down beside him, taking his head in my lap. The blood was streaming from his mouth, but not a drop came from his wound. He was unable to speak, but could, by motions, make himself understood. The surgeon was soon on the spot, and used all his skill to stop the flow of blood, which threatened to strangle the patient, but was only partially successful.

"Lieut. Lee's condition was deemed very critical—so much so that Major Van Dorn though it advisable to take down any message he might wish to send his parents, and my recollection is that the letter, as dictated, was addressed jointly to his father and mother. It was necessarily very brief, as he could only speak with great effort, and one sentence still remains fresh in my memory. It was that; 'he was dying a soldier's death, the one he preferred above all others.' In the meantime, the troops had overwhelmed the Indians, killing 55 warriors and taking numerous prisoners. In the last assault, my captain —E. Kirby Smith—was severely, but not dangerously, wounded. Now that the fight was over the officers gathered around their wounded comrade with expressions of sympathy and sorrow. They soon dispersed, however, at the request of the surgeon, who feared bad effect for his patient from the excitement of their presence. Lieut. Lee remained perfectly still for several minutes after they left, when, looking up at me, he said: 'Jack you are going to loose your best friend.' This caused me to feel much depressed, as I was sincerely attached to him, but an

incident which took place a little later made me feel differently. At that time a Lieut. Kimmel, an old West Point comrade, who had only just heard of his friend's misfortune, being at a distant part of the field, came rushing up and, taking both of Lieut. Lee's hands, said; 'Fitz, old man, we can't afford to loose you,' together with many other expressions of love and sympathy; and as the sufferer seemed pleased and interested, continuing saying: 'I had a close call myself,' and took off his hat and showed where a bullet had passed through it. Lieut Lee, with a faint smile on his face, turned his head towards Kimmel and said between gasps: 'Kimmel do you wish me to believe that an Indian shot that hole in your hat! Acknowledge the corn, old man; didn't you go behind a tree and shoot the hole in your hat yourself?' After that I never doubted he would get well, but he had a hard struggle, and it was many months before he entirely recovered.....

"Soon after our arrival at Camp Colorado, Lieut. Lee was granted permission to visit Austin, the capital of the State, to witness the inauguration of General Sam. Houston, as Governor, and took me with him. We traveled by ambulance and, after taking in the inauguration, started on our return via San Antonio, then, as now, the livilest city in Texas. After a few days spent in San Antonio, we started for our station, arriving there on the evening of the 12th of January, 1860, in the midst of a Texas norther and snow-storm. A short time before, two men of the company, who had been on a hunting pass, came in and reported having seen a party of Indians driving a large band of horses and mules about sixteen miles from the post. As none but

hostile Indians ever visited that part of the country and then only for the purpose of murder and plunder, preparations were made at once to pursue them, and, inside of an hour from our arrival at the post, Lieut. Lee, with a detachment of twelve men, was in the saddle and riding for the place where the Indians had been seen. The wind was blowing a gale and snow drifting so as to make our progress very slow, and, in consequence, we did not reach the point where the Indians had been seen until after daylight. Their trail was soon found, but, on account of the heavy fall of snow covering it in places and the precautions taken by the Indians to hide it, such as driving their animals in a circle and other devices, it was slow work following it for the first few miles, but after that, the Indians having become careless, we were able to follow it at a trot and kept the gait without a halt or rest until night set in and it was too dark to follow further. We then halted for the first time since leaving the post eighteen hours before, not to go into camp but to sit and walk about until it was light enough to again take up the trail. Fortunately, the norther had blown itself out during the night, but it was still very cold and, no fire being allowed we breakfasted on hard tack and frozen pork. When the time came to mount our horses, some of the men were so stiff they had to be assisted into their saddles. We had not traveled far, before we came to where the Indians had halted for a short time, and killed a colt and cooked a part of it. From these indications we infered that they could not be very far ahead of us and spurred on with renewed vigor. As the sun was out bright and strong, causing the snow to melt rapidly, the trail was now easy to follow and

ran a course parallel to a ridge which extended northward for several miles. This ridge was covered by a heavy growth of cedar trees, with occasional clear spaces. Pressing forward on the trail, which was becoming fresher each mile, one of our party discovered an object in the timber to our right and I was ordered to ascertain what it was. After going about 300 yards, I was able to ascertain that it was a loose pony, and, turning to rejoin the command, saw the Indians going over a hill less than half a mile ahead. Luckily they did not see me, and, putting spurs to my horse I soon joined the command and reported my discovery to Lieut. Lee, who immediately halted, ordered the men to divest themselves of their overcoats and other impedimenta, and carefully examine their arms. Then, drawing our pistols, we moved forward at a fast gallop, and, rising the hill, came in full view of the objects of our pursuit, who, owing to being muffled up in their blankets and robes, had not as yet seen us. Indeed we could have gotten right on them, but for the accidental discharge of a pistol by one of the men, which gave the Indians notice.

"Lieut. Lee immediately ordered the charge, and the men dashed forward with yells and cheers, following the scattering Indians, who were too much surprised to make a stand, but broke to the timber on the ridge to our right. In the pursuit I found myself with Lieut. Lee and one other man trying to intercept two of the men before they could reach the timber. One was killed at the edge, but the other being mounted on a remarkably fast pony not only succeeded in getting to the timber, but had the audacity to turn and fire several shots at us before

entering. But Lieut. Lee was determined he should not escape, and we followed him into the timbers and for several miles along the ridge. The cedar trees grew very thick in places, and we would at times ride several hundred yards without catching sight of our Indian, and then again, striking into one of the clear spaces, we would find ouselves close upon him, when Lieut. Lee would take a snap shot at him with a carbine he had borrowed from the man with us, but without effect. This continued for about seven miles, when we came to where the ridge ended in ravines opening out into the prairie. We had lost sight of our Indian for some time, but the tracks of his pony in the melting snow were quite plain and easily followed. Presently the tracks led into a dark ravine. Here we separated, Lieut. Lee taking one side and I the other, the third man following the trail. We had only gone a few hundred yards, when lieutenant called to me to come to his side of the ravine, as he wished to speak to me, and, as I turned to reply, I saw the Indian coming out of the ravine we had passed, on foot, and run over the hill toward a ravine on the other side. I instantly called out 'There he goes, lieutenant!' and the latter turned just in time to see him disappear over the hill. We immediately galloped to the point where he disappeared, but could see nothing of him anywhere, but dismounting soon discovered his moccasin tracks leading down the hill into a thicket. Leaving our horses in charge of the other man, we entered the brush abreast, with an interval between us of about thirty yards. Lieut. Lee still wore his overcoat, made of heavy cloth with cape, and was armed with an old fashioned muzzle-loading carbine and Colt's

revolver. I had a pistol only. After making our way cautiously into the brush for a couple of hundred yards, Lieut. Lee called to me, 'Jack, keep a good look out now, for he is not far off; here is his blanket,' which he picked up from the ground and threw across the carbine he carried on his left shoulder and started forward. At this time the Indian was only a few yards away, crouching behind a small ledge of rocks, where he remained until Lieut. Lee was almost on top of him, when, straightening up with a yell, he let drive an arrow full at his breast. This the lieutenant avoided by jumping to one side, but it was shot with such force and at such close range that, after passing through the cape and left sleeve of his coat, it struck the stock of the carbine he carried and broke in two. In jumping aside, Lieut. Lee dropped the carbine and was left with his pistol only, which he thrust towards the Indian to fire, when the latter grasped it by the barrel with his left hand and turned the muzzle from him. In this position the pistol was discharged without injury to either, and in the struggle that issued for its possession, it fell to the ground, and for the time was lost to both of its combatants. A desperate hand to hand struggle now ensued, the Indian now attempting to use his knife and Lieut. Lee closing with him to prevent him. The whole thing was so sudden and startling that for a moment I was powerless to move and stood still in my tracks, but, hearing the lieutenant call my name, I hurried to his assistance. The Indian was the larger and stronger man, and he flung his antagonist about with apparent ease, but could not down him. Seeing me approach with my pistol presented, he managed to place the lieutenant be-

tween him and me, and I was afraid to shoot for fear I might hit my officer. An instant later, greatly to my surprise and joy, I saw the Indian hurled to the ground, Lieut. Lee falling on top—one of the prettiest falls I have ever seen. Now one of those fortunate circumstances took place which seldom happen more than once in a lifetime. As Lieut. Lee was falling he saw his pistol, which had been dropped in the struggle, lying on the ground and within reach. With great presence of mind he managed to free his right arm and, grasp and cock the pistol and fire a bullet through the Indian's cheeks, while another shot better aimed sent him to the 'happy hunting grounds.'

"As soon as he could free himself from the embrace of the Indian, he arose to his feet and commenced to feel over his body for knife or arrow wounds, but, fortunately, though his clothing was cut in many places, his skin was not touched. This was due to the heavy clothing he had on, especially to the overcoat, the material of which was unusually thick and heavy.

"I remarked to him: 'You had a pretty close call with the Indian.' He replied, at the same time extending his arms, 'Yes he was a big fellow, but I was only getting my music up with him and feel now that I could get away with half a dozen just like him.' Later, on my asking him how he succeeded in throwing the Indian, he said:

"He was very strong as far as brute strength went, but he knew nothing of the science of wrestling. For a time, though, I thought he would get me, when I happened to think of a trick in wrestling which I learned during my school days in Vir-

ginia. It was known as the 'Virginia back heel.' I tried it on him and fetched him.'

"Lieut. Lee was complimented in orders by his department commander and the commanding General of the army, General Scott, but I doubt if anyone ever heard him talk of his achievements as a young man on the plains of Texas, as he is all together too modest to speak of his own exploits.

E. M. Hayes, Major, 7th Cavalry."

"Fort Clark, Texas, January, 1895."

The outbreak of the civil war found Fitzhugh Lee at West Point an instructor of cavalry tactics. Every endeavor was made to induce him to continue at his post. He was told that if he was not willing to fight against his State, he could remain during the war at West Point, where good pay and easy duty would be his portion. Rejecting these tempting offers, he promptly resigned and offered his services to his native State. Being appointed adjutant-general on the staff of General Ewell, he served in that capacity during the campaign of the first Manassas. In September, 1861, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel of the First Virginia Cavalry, of which Stuart was then colonel. On the promotion of Stuart, he was chosen colonel, and, later, brigadier-general under Stuart. When Stuart made his famous raid around McClellan, Colonel Lee accompanied him. In 1863, the cavalry of the army of Northern Virginia were divided into two divisions; General Hampton and Fitzhugh Lee succeeded Hampton as the commander of the cavalry of Northern Virginia, with rank of major-general. So much for the various positions held by him. To give a full sketch of his

army services, of the battles participated in, of the special raids, of the daring scouting parties, or of the skill with which he aided in covering movements of the army, and that, too, with such a meagre force—to tell all this would be to write a history of the achievements of the army of Northern Virginia. Suffice it to say, that General Fitzhugh Lee was frequently commended and always trusted by his superior officers, and was the idol of his brave troopers. That the cavalry arm of the Southern armies was not able to accomplish more, or to better hold its own against the greater numbers and much better equipped troopers of the enemy, was never due to any lack of bravery on the part of the soldiers nor to want of skill and daring on the part of their officers. The Southern cavalry was never properly mounted nor armed, and seldom did man or beast receive sufficient rations. But all this is well known, and needs no further statement. After the war, General Lee retired to his desolated farm in Stafford County, and, like the rest of his brave comrades, went to work. And it was hard work. He himself has said of it: "I had been accustomed all my life to draw corn from the quartermaster, and found it rather hard now to draw it from an obstinate soil, but I did it!" In the autumn of 1885, General Lee was elected Governor of Virginia, thus following the footsteps of his grandfather, General Henry Lee.

General Lee was married at Alexandria, on the 19th of April, 1871, to Ellen Bernard, daughter of George D. Fowle, of that place; they had five children:

1—Ann Maria 8, born 1872, died in infancy.

II—Ellen 8, born 1873, married Capt. James Rhea,

of the 7th U. S. Cavalry, now stationed in the Philippines. They have two children.

III—Fitzhugh 8, unmarried a Captain in the 7th U. S. Cavalry, now stationed in the Philippines.

IV—George 8, married Kathryn Burton. 1st lieutenant in 7th U. S. Cavalry, now detailed at Fort Riley.

V—Nannie 8, married 1st Lieutentant Lewis Brown, of the 7th U. S. Cavalry and now stationed in the Philippines.

VI—Virginia 8, married Lieutenant John Montgomery, of the 7th U. S. Cavalry and now stationed in the Philippines.

VII—Sydney Smith 8, died in infancy.

**George Washington Custis Lee.**

George Washington Custis 7, son of Robert Edward Lee 6, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1).

George Washington Custis Lee was born at Fortress Monroe, Virginia, on the 16th of September, 1832. His earlier school days were passed at "Clarens," in Fairfax County, at the classical school of the late Rev. George A. Smith, later, he entered the celebrated mathematical school of Benjamin Hallowell, at Alexandria, where his father had studied before him. President Zachary Taylor nominated him to a cadetship at West Point, and he entered the institution in June, 1850. In June 1854, he graduated at the

head of his class, having passed the four years of study there without receiving a single demerit. He was then assigned to the corps of engineers with the rank of brevet second lieutenant; in 1855, he was made full second lieutenant, in 1859, first lieutenant. During his seven years service in the U. S. Army, he was on duty in the engineer bureau at Washington, in Georgia, Florida, and California, engaged in harbor defenses and river improvements. On the second of May, 1861, he resigned from the U. S. Army, to enter the service of his native State; he was appointed major of engineers, and when the Virginia forces were turned over to the Confederate States government, he was commissioned a captain of engineers, C. S. A. On the last of August, 1861, he was appointed aide-de-camp to the President of the Confederate States, with rank of colonel. During his service on the President's staff he was engaged in supervising the defenses of Richmond. Toward the end of June, 1863, he was made a brigadier-general to command troops for the defense of Richmond; against cavalry raids, etc. During the summer of 1864, he was appointed a major-general to command a division which operated on the lines below Richmond, from Chaffin's Bluff northward, in which command he continued until the evacuation of Richmond and Petersburg.

In the autumn of 1865, General Lee received the appointment to the chair of Civil and Military Engineering at the Virginia Military Institute, at Lexington, Va.

He continued in this professorship until after the death of his father, when (on the first of February, 1871) he was elected president of Washington and Lee University, which position he held until he

resigned and was made President Emeritus for life. He retired to the old home of his brother, "Ravensworth," where he now lives unmarried.

Mr. Davis held General Custis Lee in such high estimation that he considered him the proper man to succeed his father in command of the Army of Northern Virginia, should occasion for a successor arise. Of this statement, the Rev. J. William Jones has given this proof: Mr. Jones writes:

"I have the following from the lips of the distinguished officer, who related it. When General —— was compelled by failing health to ask to be relieved from a certain important command, he went to Richmond to confer with President Davis as to his successor, and to endeavor to impress upon him the very great importance of the district, and of the commander being a man of fine abilities. Mr. Davis fully sympathized with his views, and, after reflection said: 'I know of no better man for that position than General Custis Lee. To show you my estimate of his ability, I will say that, when some time ago I thought of sending General Robert Lee to command the Western army, I had determined that his son Custis should succeed him in command of the Army of Northern Virginia. Now I wish you to go up and see General Lee, tell him what I say, and ask him to order General Custis Lee to the command of that department. Tell him I will make his son major-general, lieutenant-general, or, if need be, full general, so that he may rank any officer likely to be sent to that department.'

"General ——— promptly sought Lee's headquarters, delivered Mr. Davis' message and urged a compliance. But to all of his arguments and en-

treaties, the old chieftain had but one reply: 'I am very much obliged to Mr. Davis for his high opinion of Custis Lee. I hope that, if he had the opportunity, he would prove himself in some measure worthy of that confidence. But, he is an untried man in the field, and I cannot appoint him to that command. Very much against his wishes and my own, Mr. Davis has kept him on his personal staff, and he had no opportunity to prove his ability to handle an army in the field. Whatever may be the opinion of others, I cannot pass by my tried officers and take for that important position a comparatively new man—especially when that man is my own son. Mr. Davis can make the assignment if he thinks proper—I shall certainly not do so.' "

When his brother, W. H. F. Lee, was a prisoner of war, and held as a hostage under sentence of death, General Custis Lee requested, under a special flag of truce, the Northern authorities to be allowed to take his brother's place as a prisoner in solitary confinment and under sentence of death, giving as his reason for the proposed exchange his desire to save from sorrow the innocent and sick wife of his wounded brother. His request was refused, on the ground that the burdens of war must remain upon those on whom it had chanced to fall.

**Major-General, William Henry Fitzhugh Lee.**

William Henry Fitzhugh 7, the second son of Robert Edward Lee 6, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), and Mary Anne Randolph Custis, his wife, was born at Arlington, Alexandria County, the 31st of May, 1837; died at "Ravensworth," Fairfax County, the 15th, of October, 1891. After a thorough preparatory course of study, first under the Rev. George A. Smith, near Alexandria, then with a Mr. McNally, at Baltimore, and, lastly, under the care of a Mr. Nugent, at New York City, he entered Harvard College in the autumn of 1854. One who also entered the freshman class of that year has given a sketch of him as he appeared at that time:

"My acquaintance with William Henry Fitzhugh Lee commenced in the summer of 1854, when we met at Cambridge as members of the freshman class at Harvard College. He was just then entering his eighteenth year, was well grown for his age, tall, vigorous, and robust; open and frank in his address, kind and genial in his manners. He entered upon his college life with many advantages in his favor. The name of Lee was already upon the rolls of the university, for other representatives of different branches of the family had entered and graduated in the years gone by, and had left pleasant memories behind them. His distinguished lineage made him a welcome guest in the old families of the university city, and of Boston, its near neighbor, who felt a just pride in the historic and traditional associations connected with the earlier history of the country, and many of the influential members of the class belonged to such families.

"He was rather older than the average age of his classmates, and his life had been spent amid surroundings that enabled him to see a good deal of society and the world, so that he brought with him into his college a more matured mind and a greater insight than the student usually possesses at the threshold of his career. He had enjoyed excellent advantages in preparing for the entering examinations, and was well grounded in the languages as well as mathematics, so that he entered the class well fitted for the course of study to be pursued. Thus, from the first, he was prominent in the university, and soon became popular among his classmates, and his prominence and popularity was maintained during his stay among us.

"This was due not to his superior distinction in any particular study or in any one feature of college life, but rather to his general standing and characteristics. He kept pace with his classmates in the recitation room, not so much by hard and continuous study as by his quick comprehension and ready grasp of the subject in hand and the general fund of knowledge at his command. He was of a friendly and companionable nature, and there was abundant opportunities in a large class to develop his disposition, cultivate social intercourse, and strengthen the bonds of good fellowship. He had been accustomed to an outdoor life in his Virginia home, and his manly training had given him an athletic frame, which required constant and vigorous exercise. This he sought in active sports on the foot-ball ground and in class and college boat clubs, where he was welcomed as a valuable auxiliary." (Extracts from the remarks of Senator Samuel Pasco, U. S. Senate, 4th March, 1892).

In 1857, Mr. Lee was appointed a lieutenant in the army at the personal request of General Scott, who wrote to the Secretary of War, urging his appointment in the following complementary terms:

"Headquarters of the Army, 8th, May, 1857.

Hon. J. B. Floyd, Secretary of War,

"Sir:—I beg to ask that one of the vacant second lieutenantcies be given to W. H. F. Lee, son of Brevet Colonel, R. E. Lee, at present on duty against the Comanches. I make this application mainly on the extraordinary merits of the father, the very best soldier that I ever saw in the field. But the son himself is a very remarkable youth, now about

twenty, of a fine stature and constitution, a good linguist, a good mathematician, and about to graduate at Harvard University. He is also honorable and amiable, like his father, and dying to enter the army. I do not ask this commission as a favor, though if I had influence I should be happy to exert it in this case. My application is in the name of the national justice in part payment (and but a small part) of the debt due to the invaluable services of Colonel Lee. I have the honor to be, etc."

Upon receiving his appointment to the army, Mr. Lee left Harvard to join his regiment, the Sixth Infantry. His first military service was to command a detachment of soldiers on their way to join the main body, then in Texas. Later he accompanied his regiment, then under the command of the brave and skillful, Albert Sydney Johnston, in his expedition against the Mormons. After the disturbances in Utah were quited he marched with his regiment to the Pacific coast, then a very tedious journey. Lieut. Lee soon became tired of the dull routine of garrison life, and resigned his commission in the army. Returning to Virginia, he married Miss Charlotte Wickham, and settled, as a planter, on the famous old Custis estate the "White House," on the Pamunky River, once the home of the Widow Custis, when she married George Washington.

The following extracts from some letters written by General R. E. Lee to his son will show the training under which he grew up:

"I hope you will always be distinguished for your avoidance of the universal bane, whisky, and every

immorality. Nor need you fear to be ruled out of the society that indulges in it, for you will acquire their esteem and respect, as all venerate, if they do not practice virtue. I hope you will make many friends, as you will be thrown with those who deserve this feeling. But indiscriminate intimacies you will find annoying and entangling, and they can be avoided by politeness and civility. When I think of your youth, impulsiveness, and many temptations, your distance from me, and the ease (and ever innocence) with which you might commence an erroneous course, my heart quails within me and my whole frame and being tremble at the possible result. May Almighty God have you in his Holy keeping. To His merciful providence I commit you, and I will rely upon Him and the efficacy of the prayers that will be daily and hourly offered up by those who love you."

A year or two later, on New Year's Day, 1859, he writes:

"I always thought and said there was stuff in you for a good soldier, and I trust you will prove it. I cannot express the gratification I felt, in meeting Colonel May in New York, at the ecomiums he passed upon your soldiership, zeal, and devotion to your duty. But I was more pleased at the report of your conduct; that went nearer to my heart and was infinitely of more comfort to me. Hold on to your purity and virtue; they will probably sustain you in all trials and difficulties and cheer you in every calamity."

So, too, when the young lieutenant had married and settled down a typical Virginia farmer:

"I am glad to hear that your mechanics are all

paid off and that you have managed your funds so well as to have enough for your purposes. As you have commenced, I hope you will continue never to exceed your means. It will save you much anxiety and mortification, and enable you to maintain your independence of character and feeling. It is easier to make our wishes conform to our means than to make our means conform to our wishes. In fact, we want but little. Our happiness depends upon our independence, the success of our operations, prosperity of our plans, health, contentment, and the esteem of our friends, all of which, my dear son, I hope you may enjoy the full."

On the outbreak of the late Civil War, Lieut. Lee raised a company of cavalry and joined the Virginia troops. As another has said of him, he "served in every grade, successfully, from captain to major-general of cavalry; he led his regiment in the famous raid around McClellan's army, and was an active participant in all these brilliant achievements, which made the cavalry services so proficient.

"In the terrible fight at Brandy Station, 10th of June, 1863, he was most severely wounded, and was taken to the residence of Gen. W. C. Wickham, a relative of his wife's where he was made prisoner by a raiding party (sent for the purpose), and carried off, at great personal suffering, to Fortress Monroe. From the latter place he was conveyed to Fort Lafayette, where he was confined until March, 1864, and treated with great severity, being held, with Capt. R. H. Taylor, under sentence of death, as a hostages for two Federal officers who were prisoners in Richmond, and whom it was thought would be executed for some retaliatory measure.

"Exchanged in the spring of 1864, he returned to find his young wife and children dead, his beautiful home burned to the ground, his whole estate devasted and laid waste by the ruthless hand of war; and yet almost his first act on reaching Richmond was to go to Libby prison, visit the two Federal officers for whom he had been held as hostage, and who, like himself , had been under apprehension of being hung, and shake hands with and congratulate them. Immediately joining his command, he led his division from the Rapidan to Appomatox, where with his father, the greatest soldier of modern times, he surrendered to the inevitable." (Extracts from the remarks of Mr. E. E. Meredith, in the House of Representatives, February 6, 1892).

Another member of the House of Representatives paid this tribute:

"Throughout the struggle, he discharged every duty and was equal to every responsibility placed upon him. His soldiers loved and trusted him as a father, for they knew he would sacrifice no life for empty glory. The saddest chapter in all his life was when—a prisoner of war at Fort Monroe, lying desperately wounded, with the threat of a retaliatory death sentence suspended over his head, in hourly expectation of its execution—he heard of the fatal illness of his wife and two little children but a few miles away. Earnestly his friends begged that he might be allowed to go and say the last farewell to them on earth. A devoted brother came, like Damon of old, and offered himself to die in 'Rooney's' place. War, inexorable war, always stern and cruel, could not accept the substituted sacrifice, and while the

sick, wounded soldier, under sentence of death, lay, himself almost dying, in the dungeon of the fort, his wife and children 'passed over the river to rest under the trees, and wait there his coming. Yet no word of reproach ever passed his gentle lips. He accepted it all as the fortune of war.

"In all the walks of life—as a student of college, as an officer in the regular army, as a planter on the Pamunky, as a leader of cavalry in the civil war, as a farmer struggling with the chaos and confusion that beset him under the new order of things following the abolition of slavery, as President of the Virginia Agricultural Society, as State Senator, and as a member of Congress—Gen. William H. F. Lee met every requirement, was equal to every emergency, and left a name for honor, truth, and virtue, which should be a blessed heritage and the inspiration for a nobler and loftier life to all those who shall succeed him." (Mr. Herbert Washington).

As had been stated, General Lee was connected with the cavalry all during the war, and, naturally, took the greatest pride in its efficiency, and was jealous of its reputation. This branch of the service seems to have been neglected by the Confederate Government, hence its inefficiency. The following letter from General Lee, on this subject, will prove of interest:

"Richmond, 29th November, 1864.

"Dear Sir, I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 23d instant, as to requirements and principles to be observed in the reorganization of the cavalry, and today comply as

succinctly as possible with your wishes, relative to my ideas on the subject.

"The cavalry of the Army of Northern Virginia is composed of the best material for troopers in the world. They are intelligent men, naturally excellent riders, and mounted on good horses, and require only, to make them more efficient, organization. First, more horse feed; second, to be more thoroughly and constantly drilled mounted; third, to be better armed. As far as my observation extends, the cavalry are well drilled on foot and with the sabre, as far as laid down in the cavalry tactics, but could not be perfected in the mounted drill for the reason that the horses, for want of a sufficient supply of food, cannot stand the required work. The enemy, on the contrary, being supplied in greater abundance, their mounted drills are mere exercise for their horses; and, in this respect only (save in numbers), is their cavalry superior to ours. Here is the advantage. Badly drilled squadrons charged, the men scatter in every direction; opposing squadrons, well drilled, moving in compact mass, fall upon the isolated fragments and overwhelm them in detail. Experience teaches the proper arms of cavalry to be—a pistol (Colt's navy the best), a breech-loading carbine (Sharp's preferred), and a sabre. The government has never been able to supply the demand for cavalry arms; they ought to be imported. Our most efficient arms have been captured from the enemy, but of course not in sufficient quantities to meet the demand.

"The government ought to furnish horses, at least to meritorious troopers who are no longer capable of furnishing their own; and next, to all cavalry serving

out of their own states. Existing orders now require permanently dismounted men to be transferred to the infantry, which is manifestly unjust to the deserving, well-trained trooper, whose circumstances are reduced, in many instances, by the enemy's incursions and depredations. Cases exist, however, sometimes requiring the transfer of cavalrymen to infantry organizations; for such men, soldiers, particularly distinguished for feats of courage, should be exchanged as an equivalent. The military axiom, that in all well disciplined, drilled commands, one soldier is as good as another, approximates to a nearer degree of truth with reference to the infantry than cavalry; for whilst the former admit of a higher state of discipline, the latter fight more detached and scattered, and individual dash has a greater influence. It generally requires too, more courage to go into a fight on horseback than on foot. Should this principal be observed, the infantry soldier would have an incentive to deeds of valor, viz.: the reward of putting him on horseback—and cavalry be composed of men who would ride up to and over almost anything.

"There should be prompt and just legislation to provide payment for all horses killed or permanently disabled in the line of duty, whether in action or otherwise, as long as the ownership remains with individuals. The regimental quartermaster ought to have the authority, with the approval of the colonel, and upon the necessary certificates, to pay all such accounts in his regiment.

"Now soldiers are paid for horses only when killed in battle, and the accounts have to pass through so many hands that an unnecessary delay is produced

even in that payment. A courier riding his horse a given number of miles in a given time, bearing important dispatches, breaks his horse down and has to abandon him, receives nothing, although he is ordered to make the time. A soldier has his horse permanently disabled by a wound, probably necessitating his being left in the enemies hands, receives nothing, and, unless he can purchase another, is transferred to the infantry.

"I have written very hastily, but think you will see what is really wanting. Whilst cavalry cannot play the important part in large combats, owing to the improved range of arms, nature of the country, etc., it formerly has done in European wars, still the demand for it everywhere is great, and unless Congress takes the matter in hand, and legislates more liberally on the subject, the enemy next spring will ride rough-shod over the whole State."

After the close of the war General Lee settled on his farm, the "White House," on the Pamunky River, which had been bequeathed to him by his grandfather, George Washington Parke Custis. The country presented one continuous scene of utter desolation. For nearly four years the tramp of armies had been to and fro over this region, and had, in consequence, left in their wake only the naked earth. Nothing daunted, he set to work to build his houses, to re-mark his farm lines with fences, to restock, and in short, to begin again the life of a Virginia Farmer. Nor was his case in the least exceptional. All through the South the same hard task confronted the returned soldiers; and with the greatest heroism did they begin life anew. General Lee married, in

1867, Mary Tabb Bolling. They removed in 1874, to "Ravensworth," an estate of the Fitzhughs in Fairfax County, which he inherited under the will of his mother's uncle, William Henry Fitzhugh, who died in 1701. There General Lee resided until his death, pursuing the quiet life of a farmer, unless taken away by the duties of various public positions, to which his countrymen elected him. He served for several years in the Virginia Senate, and was elected to the Fiftieth, Fifty-first, and Fifty-second Congresses, his death occurring a few months prior to the expiration of his second term.

In personal appearance, William Henry Fitzhugh Lee, was tall, well proportioned, and of easy, dignified carriage. His courtly bearing and pleasant manners clearly stamped him one of the true gentlemen of the olden time. He was very fond of the country; of its animal as well as its vegetable life, even of its sounds. He was also devoted to children, and they to him. Of him his pastor has written: "Of his home life, it is too sacred to speak. It was simply beautiful. He lived for his family. All, including the servants, were devoted to him. His reading of family prayers before breakfast was very impressive. Sunday nights, after tea, he liked to hear the old hymns sung. General Lee was charitable to an extent that no one knew. Many there are, not only among his neighbors, but in all parts of Virginia and beyond, who have been the recipients of his kindness. The mail constantly brought him requests for help, and generally, when the object was a worthy one, it was not in vain. How many poor blacks, not to mention the whites, who will miss his assistance in their need.

"To his friends, and they were a host, he was as true as steel and if he had an enemy, I do not believe it was his fault. General Lee had the best control over himself of any man I ever knew. 'Better is he that ruleth his spirit than he that taketh a city.' If misunderstood or misrepresented as a public man; if worried or annoyed about business, or if things went wrong, he ever exhibited the same courteous manner and deportment. He used to say that, 'because a man was worried he had no right to be rude.' One who was an intimate of his family for years says that she, 'never heard from him a cross word.' As a true Christian man in every relation of life—at home, to his neighbors, to his church, to his country —I have known no higher example than General 'Rooney' Lee."

As previously stated, William H. F. Lee was twice married; first, in 1859, to Charlotte, daughter of George Wickham, U. S. N. From this union two children were born, a boy and a girl. Both died in early infancy. Mrs. Lee died 26th of December, 1863, while her husband was a prisoner. Their son was named after his grandfather—Robert Edward Lee. On hearing of the baby's christening, the grandfather wrote his son: ".....So he is called after his grandpapa, the dear little fellow. I wish him a better name and hope he may be a wiser and more useful man than his namesake. Such as it is, however, I gladly place it in his keeping, and feel that he must be very little like his father if it is not elevated and ennobled by his bearing and course in life. You must teach him, then, to love his grandpapa, to bear with his failings and avoid his errors, to be to you as you have been to me, and he may then

enjoy the love and confidence of his father, which I feel for you, greater than which my son ever possessed."

W. H. F. Lee married secondly, November 28, 1867, Mary Tabb Bolling and had two sons:

Robert Edward 8, born at Petersburg, Va., February 11, 1869, was educated at the Episcopal High school near Alexandria, Va. In September, 1886, he entered the Washington and Lee University for a four year academic course, this was followed by two years in law, graduating a B. L. from that institution, June, 1902. In October of the same year, was admitted to practice in the District of Columbia, where he still continues a prominent member of the Washington Bar. His home is at "Ravensworth," Fairfax County, Va., where he lives unmarried.

He served his county three terms in the House of Delegates, being first elected to the sessions of 1902 and successively returned to the sessions of 1904 and 1906.

George Bolling 8, born Lexington, Va., August 30, 1872, was educated at the Episcopal High school, near Alexandria, followed by an academic course at the Washington and Lee University, and later graduated in medicine from the School of Physicians and Surgeons at New York.

He is practicing his profession in New York City, where he now lives unmarried.

### Captain Robert E. Lee.

Robert Edward 7, the youngest son of Robert Edward Lee 6, (Henry 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1), and Mary Anne Randolph Custis, his

wife, was born at Arlington in Alexandria County, on the 27th of October, 1843. After a course of tuition at private schools, he entered the University of Virginia in October, 1860. Though the students of the university were exempted from army service, all the young men of suitable age hastened to join the Southern army; among them Robert E. Lee, Jr. In February, 1862, he joined the famous "Rockbridge Artillery," as a private, and served with it until appointed a lieutenant and aide to his brother, General W. H. F. Lee. He continued with the cavalry staff until the close of the war, rising to the grade of captain.

Mrs. Lee naturally desired that her son should be with his father. In reply to a letter on this subject, the General wrote her: ".....In reference to Rob, his company would be a great pleasure to me, and he would be extremely useful to me in many ways, but I am opposed to officers surrounding themselves with their sons and relatives. It is wrong in principle, and in that case selections would be made from private and social relations rather than for the public good. There is the same objection to going with Fitz Lee. I should prefer Rob's being in the line of an independent position, where he could rise by his own merit and not through the recommendation of his relatives. I expect him here soon, when I can better see what he himself thinks. The young men have no fondness for the society of the old general. He is too heavy and sombre for them." In another letter, the General adds: "I hope our son will make a good soldier."

After the close of the war, Captain Lee settled on his farm on the Pamunky River, where he now re-

sides. He had been twice married. First, on the 16th of November, 1871, to Charlotte Taylor, daughter of R. Barton Haxall, and Octavia Robinson, his wife, of Richmond; she was born on the 23d of October, 1848, died, without issue, on the 22nd of September, 1872. He was married secondly, at Washington, D. C., on the 8th of March, 1894, to Juliet, daughter of Colonel Thomas Hill Carter, and Susan Roy, his wife, of "Pampatike," King William County, and had:

I—Anne Carter 8, born at University of Virginia, July 21, 1897.

II—Mary Custis 8, born at Richmond, Va., December 23, 1900.

**Edwin Gray Lee.**

Edwin Gray Lee 7, third child of Edmund Jennings 6, (Edmund Jennings 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1,) born at "Leeland," Jefferson County, W. Va., May 25, 1835, died at Yellow Springs, Va., August 24, 1870.

On the breaking out of the late Civil War, he entered the Confederate service as a second lieutenant in the 2nd Virginia Infantry; in May, 1861, he was appointed first lieutenant and aide to General Thomas J. Jackson; then major of the 23d regiment, next lieutenant-colonel, and in August, 1862, colonel of that regiment. Forced by ill health to give up duty in the field, he resigned early in 1863, but was

again assigned to active duty in the fall of that year, and served on the staff of General Robert Ransom, on the south side of James River in May, 1864; was sent to Staunton the following June to command the post there and to call out the reserves in the valley. When the enemy advanced in force agaist Staunton, Col. Lee saved all the government property and all the prisoners, losing only his own baggage. In October of 1864 he was appointed brigadier-general, and later was sent to Canada on secret service for the Confederate Government. After the war, his health being very poor, he was compelled to spend his winters in the far South. On hearing of his death, General Robert E. Lee wrote: "I am truly sorry to hear of Edwin Lee's death. He was a true man, and if his health had permitted would have been an ornament, as well as a benefit to his race. He was certainly a great credit to the name."

On November 17, 1859, he married Susan Pendleton, and left no issue.

**Edmund Jennings Lee.**

Edmund Jennings 7, sixth child of Edmund Jennings 6, (Edmund Jennings 5, Henry 4, Henry 3, Richard 2, Richard 1,) born at "Leeland," Jefferson County, W. Va., October 8, 1848, served in the Southern Cavalry during the last two years of the war, married first, September 25, 1875, Rebecca Lawrence Rust, of "Rockland," Loudoun County, Va., and had:

I—Lawrence Rust 8.

II—Edmund Jennings 8.

III—Armstead Mason 8.

On September 26, 1893, he married Bessie Read Neilson.